

THE  
**VATICAN,**  
**ISLAM**  
AND  
**JERUSALEM**

*...and the*  
**INVASION OF AMERICA**

**A MESSAGE  
WHOSE TIME HAS COME**

**Jonathan Gray**

## **About the author**

Jonathan Gray is a globally recognised researcher, author and speaker on international affairs. His world-wide radio audiences number tens of millions. The author has hosted newspaper columns and contributed to numerous magazines.

First published 2016

Copyright © Jonathan Gray 2016

All rights reserved

<http://www.beforeus.com>

If I failed to credit any illustrations reproduced in this book, I offer my apologies. Any sources omitted will be appropriately acknowledged in all future editions of this book.

Limited portions of this work may be copied for study or review purposes without written permission, provided that the source is duly credited.

**WARNING: The contents of this book may be hazardous to your pre-conceived ideas**

**OTHER BOOKS BY JONATHAN GRAY**

[http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart\\_hc.html](http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_hc.html)

Dead Men's Secrets

More Dead Men's Secrets

Sting of the Scorpion

The Ark Conspiracy

Curse of the Hatana Gods

64 Secrets Ahead of Us

Bizarre Origin of Egypt's Ancient Gods

The Lost World of Giants

Discoveries: Questions Answered

Sinai's Exciting Secrets

Ark of the Covenant

The Killing of Paradise Planet

Surprise Witness

The Corpse Came Back

The Discovery That's Toppling Evolution

UFO Aliens: The Deadly Secret

Stolen Identity: Jesus Christ – History or Hoax?

Who's Playing Jesus Games?

The Da Vinci Code Hoax

The Sorcerers' Secret

What Happened to the Tower of Babel?

The 2012 Prophecy

Welcome, Then Betrayal

How Long Was Jesus in the Tomb?

The Great Dating Blunder

Lost races: The Big dating Shock

The Weapon the Globalists Fear

Modern Religious Myths About Genesis

Will You Survive?

The Forbidden secret

**E-BOOKS FROM**

[http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart\\_ebooks.html](http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_ebooks.html) :

In Search of Lost Cities

Into the Unknown

In a Coffin in Egypt

The Magic of the Golden Proportion

Solomon's Riches

Lost Races: The Big Dating Shock

Men in Embarrassing Places

Just Sitchin Fiction?

# CONTENTS

## Page

7 Introduction

## ISLAM

- 9 1 Islam statistics Europe and U.S.A.  
 19 2 History of the Arabs  
 27 3 Amazing prophecies come true  
 33 4 How to read and understand  
 36 5 Terms applied to Islam  
 37 6 The children of the east  
 40 7 The locusts  
 43 8 The locusts are also "war horses"  
 45 9 The locusts are also "four winds"  
 46 10 Scorpions

## THE BIG PICTURE

- 47 11 A cosmic war  
 59 12 Planet hijacked  
 71 13 Operation Rescue  
 83 14 Counter attack

## DANIEL'S PROPHECIES

- 88 15 Daniel's four amazing prophecies  
 89 16 The Daniel 2 prophecy  
 92 17 The Daniel 7 prophecy  
 102 18 The Daniel 8 prophecy  
 115 19 When do the 2,300 days begin?

## MORE PROPHECY

- 123 20 The rapture theory  
 138 21 The tribulation and Second Coming  
 150 22 Daniel's parallel prophecy pattern  
 151 23 The Daniel 10-12 prophecy

**VATICAN AND ISLAM**

- 167 24 Why the Vatican created Islam**  
**177 25 An insider's confession**  
**187 26 Islam and the First Woe**  
**200 27 The Second Woe... and the Awakening**

**OUR DAY**

- 217 28 Cleansing the sanctuary**

**VATICAN AND AMERICA**

- 240 29 Who is the Revelation beast?**  
**270 30 The Man With the Number 666**  
**280 31 Rome controls all key organizations**  
**297 32 America in Bible prophecy**  
**325 33 Planning America's downfall**  
**34 Three angels' messages**

- 337 OUR DAY (contd)**  
**362 35 Seven angels connect it all**  
**367 36 The Third Woe**  
**37 Who set up the State of Israel?**

**374 WHAT'S COMING**

- 379 38 Islam confederacy formed**  
**389 39 Israel invaded**  
**405 40 The 4 winds progressively released**  
**407 41 The Latter Rain**  
**413 42 The Loud Cry**  
**416 43 America punished**  
**428 44 Islam as a protector**  
**438 45 Probation closes - winds break out fully**  
**443 46 Seven last plagues**  
**454 47 Armageddon and Islam destroyed**  
**459 48 Rome destroyed at Jesus' return**  
**461 49 What Jesus is preparing for you**  
**467 50 Get ready**  
**468 51 Promises for the time of trouble**

# INTRODUCTION

## **A message whose time has come**

Would you stick your neck out like this man did? And the whole world knew it! But then look what happened?

At the time, the Ottoman empire was a world power. European nations were afraid of them. Islam had been striking fear into the heart of Europe for 400 years.

Then in 1838 a scholar, Josiah Litch, announced publicly that the Ottoman Empire "will lose supremacy on August 11, 1840."

"Yes, this event will happen two years from now, in 1840, and more than that, it will take place precisely in August that year. And not just in August, but on the 11th day of August... on that very day, and no other time!"

People were responding, "That's ridiculous! The Ottoman empire has been around for hundreds of years. They're so powerful. And you're saying we won't have to deal with them in two years? Oh, come on!" In fact, most people did not accept what Litch was saying.

As the time approached, thousands watched with intense interest. Thousands of non-believers waited to see if the prophecy would fail.

August 11 dawned. I can almost overhear Josiah at breakfast that morning, announcing to his family, "Today is the day. Today the Ottoman empire will lose its supremacy."

Supportive but a little worried, his wife says, "But what if..."

"I am absolutely certain it will happen," responds Josiah. "I've checked and re-checked the prophecy so many times. It is clear."

The hours tick by. And on the other side of the world the Turkish leader voluntarily signs a paper that takes away the independence and power of the Turkish Sultan forever. Turkish supremacy is passed to the four great powers of Europe, Britain, Russia, Prussia and Austria, who have come together in a "coalition of the willing" to decide the fate of Islam.

So it was that the Ottoman empire, which for almost four centuries had tormented the nations of Europe, finally lost its supremacy.

On the very year, month and day that Josiah Litch had predicted, the newspapers announced:

- \* "The Ottoman empire has been defeated."
- \* "The Ottoman empire has fallen."
- \* "The Ottoman empire is no longer in power."

And thousands of skeptics who had laughed at Josiah Litch quickly became believers in Bible prophecy.

Did you know that **the world's No. 1 best seller** is the Bible?  
Did you know that it contains about one thousand (1,000)  
**prophecies of future events?**

What Josiah Litch discovered is only part of a larger prophecy that is still coming true in our day. It reveals secrets of coming world events that you and your family will surely want to know about.

# 1

## ISLAM STATISTICS - EUROPE AND USA

Today Islam is again becoming a force in the world. Many, particularly in Europe and the USA, are expressing alarm at the rapid growth of Muslim power within their borders.

**In Belgium**, the number of Muslims in 1950 was 8,638..... by 2014 it was 670,000.

**In France**, in 1950 there were 230,075 Muslims... but by 2014 it was 6,130,000.

**In the Netherlands**, in 1950 there were only 5,075 Muslims.. and by 2014 it was 920,000.

**In the United Kingdom**, in 1950 there were only 101,232 Muslims... but by 2014 it had leapt to 2,950,000.

**Germany**... in 1950 there were 20,520 Muslims and by 2014 it had leaped to 4,030,000.

**USA:** In 1970 there were 100,000 Muslims. Today there are over 9,000,000 Muslims. In 20 years there will be 50,000,000. Islam is now the fastest growing religion.

The Muslim population is expanding at warp speed.

Every Western nation is heading down this path. Muslim leaders openly declare they hate Western society and are planning to take it over. Their holy book is a totalitarian ideology founded on submission and world domination. And toward that end, Islam is on the march.

Islam is the fastest-growing religion in Europe. In 2011, it was predicted that the world's Muslim population will grow twice as fast as non-Muslims over the next 20 years.

As I write this, hoards of Muslim refugees are flooding into Europe. On September 27, 2015, *Before It's News* published this eyewitness report, titled ***Germany: Chaos descends***:

*"This is from a retired RAF officer who served in the sixties and is now working and living in Germany.*

*"Dear Friends,  
Europe is now in total chaos and I think that you should know about it.*

*"I have waited a week or so to see how things will develop and to glean more information before presenting the facts.*

*"As you may know from the media, the flood of refugees cum economic immigrants into Europe has reached ridiculous proportions and to the extent that Hungary and other Balkan states have closed their borders and Turkey is considering doing the same.*

*"Angela Merkel in an ill advised speech to the Bunderstag, welcomed all refugees to Germany and the floodgates opened and, in my view, this was all pre-planned beginning with the Pope's appeal last year for Islam to move closer to Christianity. This was then followed up via the Italian Government instructing the Italian Navy to rescue all boat refugees and bring them to Italy.*

*"As a result, it seems that some 8000 people per day are now entering Europe via various routes. **Most of these** are young males between 17 and 25. The result is chaos as you can imagine. [But **are these alleged refugees who they claim to be?**]*

*"Here in Saarland we have been overwhelmed with refugees mainly young males but some families. In Lebach, some 10 kilometres from here, a camp for 200 was set up and a further 100 added this last week. The politicians, local government and religious leaders have fallen over themselves to bring them in and cater for them.*

*"And so what is the result? In Ventimiglia near Monte Carlo, the refugees banded together (organised by smart phone) and over ran the market and stole or destroyed everything and ransacked the town.*

*"Here in Lebach, a group entered a supermarket and took what they wanted and destroyed the rest. When the Manageress confronted them, they called up their friends and smashed the place to bits. The police arrived but were overwhelmed. The supermarket is now closed.*

*"Yesterday, my friends rang from Weissenfels near Leipzig since two supermarkets and a Kaufland store in Halle suffered the same way. More news is coming in from all over Germany of the same situations.*

*"The media report none of this.*

*"Many people have demonstrated against being over run by immigrants. In Weissenfels, families were thrown out of an eight flat apartment block and 70 refugees moved in. Small towns of some 2000 to 3000 people are over run by some 5000 to 6000 refugees.*

*"Much civil unrest is apparent and is just boiling under the surface. Europe is in chaos and the do gooders have totally lost control of the situation. Islam has overwhelmed us.*

*"For the Syrian and Afghan refugees, I have every sympathy and they need help. They should get it. But for the rest, in my view, the state authorities must be firm and send them back. Perhaps it is too late.*

*"Anyway, I thought that you should know that the situation here is pretty grim and I fail to see how it can be resolved. I can only foresee a police state. (<http://beforeitsnews.com>)*



## **Do you know what Hijrah is?**

Hijrah is jihad by migration - moving to a new land to impose Islam there. It is considered in Islam to be a holy action. *"And whoever emigrates for the cause of Allah will find on the earth many locations in abundance, and whoever leaves his home as an emigrant to Allah and His Messenger and then death overtakes him, his reward has already become incumbent upon Allah."* (Koran 4:100) So dying in the process is essentially the same as being a suicide bomber - his reward is automatic. Hence the great eagerness to infiltrate into western countries.

This current massive migration flood (swarming in "like locusts" - the biblical term) was announced in January, 2015. A supporter (or member) of ISIS uploaded a document in Arabic that urged Muslims to get to Libya for its proximity to southern Europe and for the important tactical value of its illegal immigration circuits to facilitate infiltration of European cities ("It has a long coast and looks upon the southern Crusader states, which can be reached with ease by even a rudimentary boat").

In February, 2015, transcripts of telephone intercepts published in Italy said ISIS was threatening to send 500,000 migrants as a "psychological weapon" against Europe.

That same month, the Turkish intelligence service informed police that up to 3,000 trained jihadists were seeking to cross through Turkey into Europe.

In May, 2015, a Libyan government adviser warned that Islamic State operatives were being "smuggled to Europe in migrant boats." ISIS is profiting from the human trafficking trade, forcing boat owners to hand over their profits or be killed. Some ISIS operatives are already sheltered in safe houses in the south of the Europe. ***Groups of men, 17 to 25***, from Palestine and Syria, cross into Bulgaria and from there move into the rest of the European Union. Go on the Internet and watch the videos of those "refugees" again. How many of the "refugees" are 17-25 year old men?

If that doesn't convince you, we already know terrorists are coming through with the waves of refugees: a week before the writing of this report, five men were arrested attempting to cross the Bulgarian-Macedonian border with Islamic State propaganda, specific Jihadists prayers, and ***decapitation videos*** on their phones. They had been posing as refugees.

Other Muslim countries are not "taking in" these "refugees"

because this is a hijrah into Europe. This is no humanitarian crisis. It is a deliberate invasion. Its goal is to transform Europe.

<http://www.ibtimes.co.uk/isis-milita...dviser-1501692>

<https://www.rt.com/news/233839-isis-...ck-diplomatic/>

<http://www.jihadwatch.org/2015/09/ro...ah-into-europe>

<http://www.jihadwatch.org/2015/09/is...ng-as-refugees>

<http://www.independentsentinel.com/i...byan-refugees/>

<http://www.quilliamfoundation.org/wp...for-the-is.pdf>

<http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/arti...on-bombed.html>

## **Female doctor's eyewitness testimony**

A female physician in Munich has sent out her report:

*Yesterday, at the hospital we had a meeting about how the situation here and at the other Munich hospitals is unsustainable. Clinics cannot handle emergencies, so they are starting to send everything to the hospitals.*

*Many Muslims are refusing treatment by female staff and, we, women, are refusing to go among those animals, especially from Africa. Relations between the staff and migrants are going from bad to worse. Since last weekend, migrants going to the hospitals must be accompanied by police with K-9 units.*

*Many migrants have AIDS, syphilis, open TB and many exotic diseases that we, in Europe, do not know how to treat them. If they receive a prescription in the pharmacy, they learn they have to pay cash. This leads to unbelievable outbursts, especially when it is about drugs for the children. They abandon the children with pharmacy staff with the words: "So, cure them here yourselves!" So the police are not just guarding the clinics and hospitals, but also large pharmacies.*

*In a hospital near the Rhine, migrants attacked the staff with knives after they had handed over an 8-month-old on the brink of death, which they had dragged across half of Europe for three months. The child died in two days, despite having*

*received top care at one of the best pediatric clinics in Germany. The physician had to undergo surgery and two nurses are laid up in the ICU. Nobody has been punished.*

*The local press is forbidden to write about it, so we know about it through email. What would have happened to a German if he had stabbed a doctor and nurses with a knife? Or if he had flung his own syphilis-infected urine into a nurse's face and so threatened her with infection? At a minimum he'd go straight to jail and later to court. With these people – so far, nothing has happened.*

### **Bus passenger's eyewitness report**

Kamil Bulonis, a Polish travel blog writer, was present on the Italian-Austrian border on September 5, 2015, as swarms of Third World nonwhites poured across the border to invade Austria and Germany. He says:

*Half an hour ago on the border between Italy and Austria I saw with my own eyes a great many immigrants ... With all solidarity with people in difficult circumstances I have to say that what I saw arouses horror ... This huge mass of people – sorry, that I'll write this – but these are absolute savages ... Vulgar, throwing bottles, shouting loudly “We want to Germany!” – and is Germany a paradise now?*

*I saw how they surrounded a car of an elderly Italian woman, pulled her by her hair out of the car and wanted to drive away in the car. They tried to overturn the bus in I travelled myself with a group of others. They were throwing faeces at us, banging on the doors to force the driver to open them, spat at the windscreen ... I ask for what purpose?*

*Among them there were virtually no women, no children—the vast majority were aggressive young men.*

*I can add that cars arrived with humanitarian aid – mainly food and water and they were just overturning those cars ...*

*Through megaphones the Austrians announced that there is permission for them to cross the border—they wanted to register them and let them go on—but they did not understand these messages. They did not understand anything.*

*And this was the greatest horror ... For among those few thousand people nobody understood Italian or English, or German, or Russian, or Spanish ... What mattered was fist law... They fought for permission to move on and they had this permission— but did not realize that they had it! They opened the luggage hatches of a French bus—and everything that was inside was stolen within short time, some things left lying on the ground ...*

*Never in my short life had I an opportunity to see such scenes and I feel that this is just the beginning.*

## **A Muslim in Germany reveals their intention**

A Muslim in Germany was caught on video saying this to a German man:

*Islam is coming to take over Germany whether you want it or not ... not through war but by the fact that Germans don't reproduce and Muslims have seven to eight children each ... but not only that, your daughters will marry bearded Muslims and wear the hijab; their sons will wear a beard! The Muslims will have four wives and 27 children, and what does the German man have? One child and maybe a little pet dog! The German has taken advantage of the Muslim for too long, just so he can drive his Mercedes. ... Now Islam is coming and your daughters will wear the hijab! Ha! I can see the look of hate in your eyes!*

This is a full-blown invasion.

No media coverage, of course, because it's a "humanitarian crisis," and that's how it is being packaged and fed to the public. Apparently the numbers that European leaders have been selling to their unsuspecting populations are wrong by at least four million. The latest invasion reflects a truer number of five million, not one million – five million invaders. If that's not war, what is?

Just a week before this was written, Germans lost their jobs at the four-star Hotel Maritim so it could house Muslim migrants. The workers and shop owners, some of whom had worked there for 25 years, were told that they would no longer have jobs. Next on the list are other accommodation places. Some Germans are even being moved out of their homes.

German politician Brigitte Meier announced, "We cannot guarantee the public safety any more." A leading Swedish politician says the country is facing a refugee catastrophe, which will lead to the "country collapsing." Austria is now building a fence on the Slovene border. Slovenia is constructing its fence on the Croat border. And now Europeans are arming themselves: There has been a rush of shotgun purchases in Austria.

Town by town, village by village, Europe is *being swallowed whole*.

And also in the USA... they are *swarming in like locusts*.

This is not an immigration, but an invasion. They are setting the stage for the global jihad.

Think about it, when global jihad is declared these young Jihadists will already be in place and ready to detonate their suicide vests and bombs.

The second biggest money making activity of the Mexican Drug Cartels has become the smuggling of Muslims across the Mexican border into the USA, for several years now. (Oliver North, *Heroes Proved*) And now Obama wants to bring them in openly by the hundreds of thousands.

Walid Shoebat says that the radical Islamists already here in the US have been making bombs in the basements of their houses in preparation for the jihad. He claims he knows this as a fact because he says he used to be one of them. (Walid Shoebat.com)

An army of suicide bombers would never mount a frontal assault like a conventional army landing on a beachhead. No, they would have to infiltrate peacefully into the nations they want to destroy so they would already be in key positions when the Global Jihad is declared as soon as the Caliphate is formed. They will be ready to take their orders from a sitting Caliph so they can all simultaneously make their suicide attacks.

The thought of what is about to happen is staggering, but are we not told that what came upon Jerusalem in 70 AD is but a faint shadow of what will come upon the entire world? This is the final judgment upon an apostate church and an impenitent world.

*"Thus saith the LORD of hosts, Behold, evil shall go forth from nation to nation, and a great whirlwind shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth." (Jeremiah 25:32)*

*"And the songs of the temple shall be howlings in that day, saith the Lord GOD: [there shall be] many dead bodies in every place; they shall cast [them] forth with silence." (Amos 8:3)*

What we are seeing now is a fulfilment of Bible prophecy - the beginning of the biblical **Third Woe** - the **Third Jihad**.

## 2

# HISTORY OF THE ARABS

## **GOD HAS A SPECIAL WARNING MESSAGE FOR THE WORLD TODAY**

Yes, the most solemn warning ever given since the time of Noah, when he was called to build the ark of safety for all who would enter. Noah had a worldwide warning for mankind, that they should turn to their living Creator in repentance from their wickedness. His message of a coming worldwide Cosmic Disaster was indeed a solemn warning to those living when earth was still in its pristine beauty.

Again, we have come to a time when, here at the close of earth's history, another serious and solemn warning—the most solemn ever given to this earth—is being given to men and women worldwide. What is that message? Who is giving this warning? How can we prepare to survive?

### ***HISTORY OF ISLAM***

Islam has a role to play in this warning. So before we get into the heart of the message regarding the Most Solemn Warning given since the time of Noah, it is necessary to look into some of the history of Islam.

Muslims recognise that much of their history has been recorded in the holy books.

The genealogy and heritage of Islam dates back to the ancient patriarch Abraham (Abram) and to his firstborn son Ishmael. Ishmael was the son from Hagar (the immigrant), the Egyptian servant-woman of Abram's wife Sarai.

The book of Genesis states that God had promised to Abram and his first wife Sarai that they would have a son, but the promise of an heir was not immediately fulfilled. As time continued on and no son appeared, it finally came to the point where Abram may have complained to God.

*“And Abram said, Lord GOD, what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless...?” (Genesis 15:2)*

*“The LORD answered Abram, saying, ...He that shall come forth out of thine own bowels shall be thine heir.” (Genesis 15:4)*

The promise was sure, though the time was delayed for the promised child.

## **The Births of Ishmael and Isaac**

Growing impatient, Abram and Sarai decided to create an heir by another woman.

*“Now Sarai, Abram’s wife, had not been able to bear children for him. But she had an Egyptian servant named Hagar. So Sarai said to Abram, ‘The LORD has prevented me from having children. Go and sleep with my servant. Perhaps I can have children through her.’ And Abram agreed with Sarai’s proposal. So Sarai, Abram’s wife, took Hagar the Egyptian servant and gave her to Abram as a wife.” (Genesis 16:1-2) This happened ten years after Abram had settled in the land of Canaan.)*

So Abram had sexual relations with Hagar, and she became pregnant. But when Hagar knew she was pregnant, she began to treat her mistress Sarai with contempt.

Then Sarai said to Abram, “This is all your fault! I put my servant into your arms, but now that she’s pregnant, she treats

me with contempt. The Lord will show who's wrong - you or me!"

Abram replied, "Look, she is your servant, so deal with her as you see fit." Then Sarai treated Hagar so harshly that she finally ran away.

A heavenly visitor found Hagar beside a spring of water in the wilderness, along the road to Shur. The angel said to her, "Hagar, Sarai's servant, where have you come from, and where are you going?"

"I'm running away from my mistress Sarai," she replied.

The angel said to her, "Return to your mistress, and submit to her authority." Then he added, "I will give you more descendants than you can count."

The angel also told her, "You will give birth to a son. You are to name him Ishmael (which means 'God hears'), for the Lord has heard your cry of distress. This son of yours will be a wild man, as untamed as a wild donkey! He will raise his fist against everyone, and everyone will be against him. Yes, he will live in open hostility against all his relatives."

The well where the angel of God found her resting was named Beer-lahai-roi (which means "well of the Living One who sees me"). It can still be found between Kadesh and Bered.

*"So Hagar gave Abram a son, and Abram named him Ishmael. Abram was eighty-six years old when Ishmael was born."* Genesis 16:1-16

Thirteen years later, **God made a covenant with Abram**, telling him that he would be a "**father of many nations**" and would be "exceeding fruitful." God then changed Abram's name to Abraham (and Sarai's to Sarah) to testify to that covenant promise.

Ishmael came under God's covenant promise, the sign for which was circumcision, according to God's direction.

*“Then God said to Abraham,... ‘This is my covenant with you and your descendants after you, the covenant you are to keep: Every male among you shall be circumcised. You are to undergo circumcision, and it will be the sign of the covenant between me and you.’” (Genesis 17:9-11)*

*“On that very day Abraham took his son Ishmael and all those born in his household or bought with his money, every male in his household, and circumcised them, as God told him. Abraham was ninety-nine years old when he was circumcised, and his son Ishmael was thirteen; Abraham and his son Ishmael were both circumcised on that same day.” (Genesis 17:23-26)*

Then the very next year, when Abraham was 100 years old and Sarah also was very old, God fulfilled His amazing promise. Sarai, or Sarah, conceived, when to human appearance it was impossible for this old couple to have children.

*“The LORD kept His word and did for Sarah exactly what He had promised. She became pregnant in her old age and gave birth to a son for Abraham. This happened at just the time God had said it would. And Abraham named their son Isaac. Eight days after Isaac was born, Abraham circumcised him as God had commanded.... And Sarah declared, ‘God has brought me laughter. All who hear about this will laugh with me. Who would have said to Abraham that Sarah would nurse a baby? Yet I have given Abraham a son in his old age!’” (Genesis 21:1-7)*

## **Separation of the sons**

When Isaac grew up and was about to be weaned, Abraham prepared a huge feast to celebrate the occasion. But then Sarah

saw Ishmael, the son of Abraham and her Egyptian servant Hagar, making fun of her son Isaac. She turned to Abraham and demanded, “Get rid of that slave woman and her son. He is not going to share the inheritance with my son Isaac. I won’t have it!”

This upset Abraham very much because Ishmael was his much-loved son. Nevertheless, God told Abraham, “Do not be upset over the boy and your servant. Do whatever Sarah tells you, for Isaac is the son through whom your descendants will be counted. But I will also make a nation of the descendants of Hagar’s son because he is your son, too.”

So Abraham got up early the next morning, prepared food and a container of water, and strapped them on Hagar’s shoulders. Then he sent her away with their son, and she wandered aimlessly in the wilderness of Beersheba.

When the water was gone, she put the boy in the shade of a bush. Then she went and sat down by herself about a hundred yards away. “I don’t want to watch the boy die,” she cried out as she burst into tears.

God heard the boy crying, and the angel of God called to Hagar, “Hagar, what’s wrong? Do not be afraid! God has heard the boy crying as he lies there. Go to him and comfort him, for I will make a great nation from his descendants.”

*“Then God opened Hagar’s eyes, and she saw a well full of water. [This is traditionally known as the well of Zamzam.] She quickly filled her water container and gave the boy a drink. And God was with the boy as he grew up in the wilderness. He became a skillful archer, and he settled in the wilderness of Paran. His mother arranged for him to marry a woman from the land of Egypt.”*  
(Genesis 21:1-21)

Isaac’s birth was truly a miracle birth. Likewise, Ishmael was sustained with a miracle when the fountain opened in the

wilderness for him and his mother Hagar. In fact, after being driven from home, Ishmael was sustained by God throughout his life in the wilderness. *“God was with the boy...”* (Genesis 21:20)

God still hears today. Are you cast off? Are you wandering alone in life? Have others forsaken you? God still listens for our voices. Remember, the name Ishmael means, “The Lord hears our affliction.”

Do not feel that God is far away. He is as near to you as He was to Hagar and Ishmael in the wilderness, about to perish from want of bread and water. Call upon Him today.

## **Ishmael's descendants**

Consistent with the longer life spans of people in those days, many years later, when Abraham was 175, he *“gave up the ghost, and died in a good old age, an old man, and full of years; and was gathered to his people.”* Then his sons— Ishmael, the son from Hagar, and Isaac, who was born to Sarah when she was very old - came together and *“his sons Isaac and Ishmael buried him in the cave of Machpelah, in the field of Ephron.”* Ishmael at this time was about 88 years old, and Isaac was 75.

Before Abraham died, he did something that has significance to us today. By Abraham’s provision before his death, Isaac would remain in Canaan as Abraham’s rightful heir, but Abraham’s love for his other sons was made evident in his provision for them, as well. *“...But unto the sons of the concubines which Abraham had, Abraham gave gifts, and sent them away from Isaac his son, while he yet lived, eastward, unto the east country.”* (Genesis 25:6-9)

From this point onward, these other sons (the Arabs) became known as the *“children of the east.”*

The Bible also give us “...*the account of the family line of Abraham’s son Ishmael, whom Sarah’s servant, Hagar [the immigrant] the Egyptian, bore to Abraham. These are the names of the sons of Ishmael, listed in the order of their birth: Nebaioth the firstborn of Ishmael, Kedar, Adbeel, Mibsam, Mishma, Dumah, Massa, Hadad, Tema, Jetur, Naphish and Kedemah. These are the sons of Ishmael, and these are the names of the twelve tribal rulers according to their settlements and camps. Ishmael lived a hundred and thirty-seven years. He breathed his last and died, and he was gathered to his people.*” (Genesis 25:12-17)

The list appears a second time in the Bible, in 1 Chronicles 1:28-31 The history, genealogy, and progeny of Ishmael (the Arabs) are not found in the Muslim Koran, but only in the Bible.

Muslims today can trace their spiritual history back to Ishmael. As his tribes intermarried, they corporately became what is called in the Bible *the children of the east*.

The **prophecies** concerning the children of the east are likewise found only in the biblical Old Testament and New Testament or Gospels. These prophecies will be related in this present book.

*Today the children of the east are mostly known as “Muslims.”* We can and will trace the history of the children of the east, including how they interacted with the other side of the family, the children of Israel, other races, and what to expect in the near future.

The holy books clearly indicate that **God has distinct plans for the children of the east at the end of time.**

## Summary

*The children of the east* (the Arabs) are descendants of Abraham through Hagar and Keturah, the latter becoming his

third wife after Sarah died. After moving “eastward” from Canaan (the territory of modern Israel), these tribes intermarried with one another and reappear throughout Bible history collectively as the “children of the east.”

It is said that Mohammed (the Muslim messenger from the desert) came from the family of Nebajoth, or Nebaioth, the first-born of Ishmael. It is obvious that the descendants of Ishmael and his sons are important, else why would the genealogy and progeny of Ishmael be mentioned twice in Scripture?

Does the Creator have a plan? Or did He just need to fill up pages of the holy books with letters and ink? Hardly. Indeed,

***God has a design for the children of the east.***

### 3

## AMAZING PROPHECIES COME TRUE

Prophecies were given concerning Abraham's two sons Ishmael (progenitor of the Arabs, born 1906 BC) and Isaac (ancestor of the Israelites, born 1893 BC) and their descendants, **the Jews and Arabs:**

#### PROPHECY 1:

Concerning Isaac's descendants (the tribes of Israel): *"The Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other."* (Deuteronomy 28:64) *"They shall be wanderers among the nations."* (Hosea 9:17)

**FULFILMENT:** Today, wherever mankind is found, whether it be barbaric or highly civilized, there you will find the Jew. He is in every land and every race. We have all heard the expression "a wandering Jew".

#### PROPHECY 2:

Concerning the descendants of Ishmael (the Arabs): Unlike the tribes of Israel, who were to be scattered, Ishmael's descendants were to remain geographically close together. *"He shall dwell in the presence of his brethren."* (Genesis 16:12)

**FULFILMENT:** And in this concentration of Middle Eastern Arabic tribes, the

political entity called “Israel” stands out like a sore thumb.

**PROPHECY 3:**

The Arabs will become a great nation. *“I will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly... and I will make him a great nation.”* (Genesis 17:20)

**FULFILMENT:** The Arabs have become great and numerous.

**PROPHECY 4:**

The Arabs will be characterised by their “wild man” behaviour, leading a free and noble existence in the desert. *“And he will be a wild man.”* (Genesis 16:12)

**FULFILMENT:** Throughout the many centuries since, the Arabian Bedouin became well known for their adventurous and lawless nature. They were marked by their infamous repeated and violent acts of theft, robbery, pillage and murder against whomever they came into contact.

**PROPHECY 5:** Their hand will be contemptuously and continually set against their neighbours, and their neighbours’ hand, in turn, will also be set against them. *“His hand will be against every man, and every man’s hand against him.”* (Genesis 16:12)

**FULFILMENT:** They have earned for themselves a reputation for being a fierce, warlike people, hard to get along with. For

nearly 4,000 years, this prophecy concerning Ishmael and his descendants has been fulfilled in a most remarkable way. *“His hand will be against everyone, and everyone's hand against him”* similarly refers to this independent lifestyle. Ishmael's descendants have always resisted foreign domination. Also it is a reference to the hostility that has historically existed among the Arabs and between the Arabs and the other sons of Abraham.

The characteristics predicted in these last two prophecies affect the politics of the Middle East today.

#### PROPHECY 6:

*Neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there.* (Isaiah 13:19)

Some years ago, a Dr Cyrus Hamlin was in Istanbul (then known as Constantinople) visiting with a colonel of the Turkish army.

Dr Hamlin asked the colonel if he had ever been to Babylon.

“Yes,” replied the colonel, “The ruins of Babylon abound in game, I engaged a sheik and his group, and went to those ruins for a week’s shooting.”

He described to his guest some of the thrills of his recent lion-hunting expedition to the ruins. “And I will tell you a curious incident,” he said. “Each morning and evening, I had to do a long walk over the desert, all because of my Arab guide’s refusal to camp overnight in the ruins.

“At sundown the Arabs, to my amazement, began to strike their tents, getting ready to leave. I went to the sheik and protested. But nothing I could say had any effect. ‘It is not safe,’ said the

sheik. ‘Nor mortal flesh dare stay here after sunset. Ghosts and ghouls come out of the holes and caverns after dark, and whomsoever they capture becomes one of themselves. ***No Arab ever has seen the sun go down on Babylon.***’”

Dr Hamlin showed interest and excitement. Taking out his copy of the Bible, he read from it:

*And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees’ excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah... **neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there.*** (Isaiah 13:19)

“That is history you are reading,” said the colonel.

“No,” answered Dr Hamlin, “it is prophecy. Those words were written when Babylon was in all her glory.”

The colonel was silent, and they never met again.

Now, I ask you, how did the Bible prophet know the Arabian would continue to exist after Babylon had become dust?

Although a few humble Arabs lived in tents about Babylon 2,500 years ago, the Babylonians were the haughty rulers of many nations. Yet the utter extinction of that ruling race was foretold. Have you ever met a solitary living Babylonian? In effect, the prophet said this: “While the most powerful race on earth will become extinct, together with their world-ruling city, this small, insignificant, nomadic race of Arabs will continue on and on for thousands of years, long after this proud city has crumbled to ruins and its very site is almost forgotten.”

For that matter, how did Isaiah know that the Arabs would continue to live near Babylon? Yet the prophecy clearly implies this. Since they were a wandering race, it would be logical to suppose that in time they would either leave the vicinity of such

a desolate place as it is now, or would themselves become extinct. But how did Isaiah know they would remain about Babylon's ruins? That they would be there today? Imagine the jeering sarcasm of skeptics if there were not an Arab within a thousand miles of Babylon! And what a field day skeptics would have if all Arabs had become as extinct as the dodo, before Babylon sank into oblivion!

Oh, and something else. How did Isaiah know that Arabs would continue to live in tents? And how did he know that the Arabs would not make use of the ruins of Babylon for shelter?

Many other explorers and excavators have reported the same fact – that it is impossible to get Arabs to remain on the site of this ancient city overnight. One explorer, Captain Mignan, says that he was accompanied by six Arabs completely armed, but he “could not induce them to remain toward night, from apprehension of evil spirits. It is impossible to eradicate this idea from the minds of these people.” (Mignan, *Travels*, page 235) And all this, despite the fact that Arabs are fearless fighters, dangerous warriors.

Again, when Saddam Hussein was attempting to rebuild Babylon, using bricks with his name inscribed on them, his workmen would not stay the night in that place.

It is a fact that this prophecy about the Arabs is amazingly unique in every particular - and each passing day serves only to strengthen its force.

Such prophetic accuracy is astonishing, to say the least. Let's face it. We humans can be sure of nothing even seconds ahead – just ask any horse punter.

However, someone behind the Bible makes this audacious claim: “So that you will know I am your Creator speaking to you, I shall now give you the game plan of history before it

happens. Test it. Prove all things. Hold fast to that which is good.”

Since man can't predict world history centuries ahead, it should be self-evident that if we find a series of predictions and they take place precisely as foretold, then surely this is proof of a source that comes from beyond mankind.

The Bible claims that God selected holy men and revealed messages to them. As they wrote, they were under some mysterious control.

In the Bible, expressions such as “God said”, “the Lord commanded”, and “the word of the Lord” occur in the Bible more than 3,800 times.

The united wisdom of man can only guess. God alone knows with infallible certainty what is to come. Predictive prophecy establishes that there is a Divine Intellect behind the Bible. It establishes the fact of God... and a God who will judge wrong, but is also compassionate and loving.

# 4

## HOW TO READ AND UNDERSTAND THE BIBLE

A little later, we shall come face to face with some prophecies that may leave you breathless.

But first, we must pause to understand something. The Bible is not a compilation of man's thoughts, but was inspired directly from the Creator. It is the voice of God speaking to mankind. Because it comes from the mind of God, its truths are so deep as to challenge the most brilliant scholars and yet be understood by the simplest child. This makes it a unique document, like no other on earth.

So would you please follow these simple guidelines and you will be pleasantly rewarded:

### **1. Pray for understanding**

Before you even begin to study, ask God to guide and show you His will. Remember that it is the Creator who gives true understanding through His Word. You cannot gain it on your own (Psalm 119:33-40; Proverbs 3:5-8; Jeremiah 9:23-24).

### **2. Keep an open mind**

Be willing to admit when you are wrong and change, even if it means letting go of a long-held belief or tradition. If you can successfully apply this one principle, you will be far ahead in the search for spiritual truth (Acts 17:11; Isaiah 8:20).

### **3. Humbly seek instruction and correction**

Approach the Bible with a teachable, humble attitude. The Word of God judges our innermost thoughts. It can show us who we really are. It can reveal every flaw in our character. So be ready

to heed its correction (Jeremiah 10:23-24; Isaiah 66:1-5; Romans 8:6-9; Matthew 5:48).

#### **4. Accept the inspiration of all the Bible**

The entire Bible, both Old and New Testaments, is the inspired Word of God. When studying, keep in mind that He inspired the words you are reading. God is directly speaking to you through them (2 Peter 1:21; Philippians 2:5; John 6:63).

#### **5. Plan time for regular study**

It's easy to let everyday concerns interfere, so schedule study time and try to maintain it. Over time you will look forward to this daily experience (Ephesians 5:15-17).

#### **6. Let the Bible interpret itself**

If something seems confusing or even contradictory, let clear biblical passages shed light on those you find difficult to understand. Scriptures do not contradict each another; they complement each other. Also, to properly understand a verse in the Bible, don't force your personal point of view into it. Instead use the context and other relevant scriptures to find the correct meaning.

*"Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation." (2 Peter 1:20)*

*"Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; **line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little**" (Isaiah 28:9-10), "**comparing spiritual things with spiritual.**" (1 Corinthians 2:13).*

You'll find that you can compare scripture with scripture and that various parts of the Bible do explain each other, even the parts that are hard to understand.

Bible prophecies which had a literal fulfilment in Old Testament times will have a spiritual application today. Those that were not fulfilled literally will have a literal application today.

All of the prophecies we shall look at in this present work are interrelated. The harmony revealed could come only from the hand of the Creator. When we look at these passages according to their obvious meaning, a picture will emerge that is crystal clear.

The language of the Bible should be understood according to its obvious meaning, unless a symbol or figure is used.

With these helpful rules to guide us, we shall now venture into some exciting discoveries concerning the people we know as "the Arabs"...

## 5

# TERMS APPLIED TO ISLAM

Before we examine the prophecies concerning Islam's destiny in the near future, it will be helpful for us to identify a few biblical terms (including symbols) which apply to Islam and its role in world events. These are as follows:

Children of the east

Locust

Angry horse

Four winds

Scorpion

We shall take each of these in turn, after which we shall provide more background, before covering the amazing prophecies that declare their destiny.

## 6

# THE CHILDREN OF THE EAST

As we noted earlier, the children of the east are descendants of Abraham through Hagar and Keturah, the latter becoming his third wife after Sarah died. After moving “eastward” from Canaan, these tribes intermarried with one another and reappear throughout Bible history collectively as the “children of the east.”

You will recall that a biblical prophecy said concerning the Arab: “*I will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly... and I will make him a great nation.*” (Genesis 17:20)

Now, in the following Bible references, I would like you to note the words that are emphasised, because these will give us the clues we need to understand some astonishing prophecies that shall soon follow.

In the following passages, the Arab tribes are identified as a **large multitude** of people, who come to **destroy**. And who are renowned as a race for their lifestyle of living in **tents** and riding on **camels**.

Genesis 25:6-9 - Abraham "sent them *eastward... to the country of the east.*" (Verses 13 to 19 reveal that, just as Israel eventually comprised 12 tribes, so are the Arabs composed of 12 tribes.)

Genesis 29:1 - "*the people of the east*"

Judges 6:3,5 - "*the children of the east... their cattle and their tents*, and they came as grasshoppers [*locusts*] for *multitude*,

both they and *their camels* were *without number*: and they entered into the land to *destroy* it."

Judges 6:33 - "*the children of the east*"

Judges 7:12 - "*the children of the east*"...lay along the valley like grasshoppers [*locusts*] *for multitude*, and their *camels* were *without number*, as the sand of the seaside for multitude."

Judges 8:10 - "*the children of the east*"

1 Kings 4:30 - "*the children of the east*"

Job 1:3 - It will come as a surprise to many people that the famous patriarch Job was not an Israelite but an Arab: Job belonged to "*the people of the east*".

Jeremiah 49:28 - "*the men of the east*"

Ezekiel 25:4 - "*the men of the east*"

Ezekiel 25:10 - "*the men of the east*"

Matthew 2:1 - The "wise men" from a foreign country who came to worship the baby Jesus are recorded as "*wise men from the east*". They followed a new "star" that appeared. The question is, how did they know about him? How did they know that he deserved worship? How came they to such full conviction that his birth had occurred in Judea? What induced them to launch an expedition lasting several months and involving such a costly and laborious search? Quite simply, it was the **star sign prophecies** about the Coming One that were on the ancient star charts and the detailed prophecies connected with them. Indeed, the Arabs were among the world's best astronomers. And yes, it's a fact! Most of the names on those ancient star charts have stemmed from Hebrew and Arabic roots. So I suggest to you that **these wise men who came to worship Jesus may well have been Arabs.**

Revelation 16:12 - Looking into the near future, may we wonder

whether or not the predicted "*kings of the east*" whose armies shall converge on Israel for the Battle of Armageddon will be Arab nations?

Does God have a plan for the Arabs, most of whom today are Muslims? Or did He just need to fill up pages of the Bible with letters and ink?

***Believe it! God has a design for the children of the east.***

# 7

## THE LOCUSTS

The *locust* is a Bible symbol of the Arab.

### 1. Arabs = Locusts = swarming numbers

Judges 6:3,5 - Of the Midianite Arabs it says, "*They came as grasshoppers [Hebrew: **locusts**] for **multitude**... they and their **camels**."*

Judges 7:12 - "*Midianites and the Amalekites [Arab tribes]... lay along the valley like grasshoppers [Hebrew: **locusts**]."*

Nahum 3:15 - "*Make thyself **many as the locusts**."* In the Bible the locust denotes *swarming numbers*.

Revelation 9:2-3 - "*...and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the **smoke** of the pit. And there came out of the smoke **locusts** upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the **scorpions** of the earth have power."*

A famous traveller named Niebuhr in his journeys through Arabia described the appearance of the swarms of **locusts**, "*The swarms of these insects darken the air and appear at a distance like clouds of smoke.*" (Niebuhr *Travels*' Vol. II. p 337)

Edward Gibbon: "*The inhabitants of Syria have remarked that **locusts** come constantly from the desert of Arabia.*" (C. Volney *Voyage en Egypte et en Syrie*. Chap.XX Sect. 5)

Says an historian: "*The barbed Arabs, swift as **locusts**, and armed like **scorpions**, were ever ready to dart away in a moment.*"

The Arab warriors on their swift horses did not march in rows or ranks like Greek or Roman soldiers, they *swarmed down onto their enemies* on their swift horses almost as quickly as if they were flying (*sounding and behaving like locusts*).

## 2. Locusts = "my great army"

Joel 1:4 - *"That which the palmerworm [root word for palmerworm is **cutting locust**] hath left hath the [swarming] locust eaten; and that which the [swarming] locust hath left hath the cankerworm [the **un-winged stage**] eaten; and that which the cankerworm hath left hath the caterpillar [the **wormed stage**] eaten."*

This verse is describing the **four stages of growth in the life of the locust**.

It is interesting to note that there are **four stages in the growth of Islam**:

**First**, the rise of Islam in the early centuries.

**Second**, the conquering of Constantinople, and their ruling of the eastern division of what had been the Roman empire.

**Third**, their fall from power, when they became known as "the sick man of the east".

**And finally**, their resurrection to a world power as the King of the North, when they will soon make their bid to take the world for Allah.

Compare Joel 2:25 where the *locusts* are called a "**great army**":

Joel 2:25 - *"And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, **my great army** which I sent among you."*

The literal Hebrew of this passage is:

*“I will repay you for the years the **locusts** have eaten—the great **locust** and the young **locust**, the other **locusts** and the **locust** swarm—my great army that I sent among you.”*

In his prophecy of coming events Joel is symbolically talking about a very numerous race of people. There are hundreds of millions of Arabs and 1.6 billion Muslims in the world today.

Joel 1:6 - *"For a nation is come up upon my land, strong, and **without number**, whose teeth are the **teeth of a lion**, and he hath the cheek teeth of a great lion."*

Compare this with a prophecy in Revelation:

Revelation 9:3,7-8 - *"And there came out of the smoke **locusts upon the earth**: and unto them was given **power**, as the scorpions of the earth have power... And the shapes of the **locusts** were like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their **teeth were as the teeth of lions**."*

The conclusion that these verses in Joel and Revelation are *talking about exactly the same thing* is inescapable. This deduction will be repeated and reinforced again and again as we compare the two books.

Therefore, the **locusts** in both books represent **Islam**, and the **teeth of a lion** indicates **ferocity**.

### **3. Arabs = Locusts = no central government**

Proverbs 30:27 - *"The **locusts** have **no king**, yet they go forth all of them by bands."* The Arabs had ***no central government*** for centuries.

## 8 THE LOCUSTS ARE ALSO "WAR HORSES"

When one examines the *locust* of Arabia he will soon see that they literally *look like little horses*.

The Bedouins describe them as "**soldiers' horses**".  
The old Italians called them "**little horses**".

Revelation 9:7 - "*And the shapes of the locusts were like unto **horses prepared unto battle***".

Revelation 9:9 - "*many horses running to battle*".

Revelation 9:16 as "*an army of horsemen*".

Revelation 9:17 - "*the horses in the vision... and **the heads of the horses** were as the heads of lions*".

Genesis 16:12 introduces Ishmael, the father of Islam, for the very first time. In the King James Bible it calls him, "*a wild man*", but if you look in the Hebrew it actually reads "*wild ass or donkey, or horse*".

So God has used the symbol of *an angry horse* to represent the descendants of Ishmael, who are the Arabs - and who today are almost all Muslims. Militant Islam is represented in Bible prophecy as an **angry horse, war horse** or **battle horse**.

Of the Turkish invasion of Asia Minor, the historian Edward Gibbon says, "*The **myriads of Turkish horses** overspread a frontier of 600 miles...*" (Gibbon, *The History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, Vol VI p.252)

Joel 2:3 - *"A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth: the land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yea, and nothing shall escape them."*

This describes a work of total devastation upon a once fruitful world.

Joel 2:4 - *"The appearance of them is as **the appearance of horses**; and as horsemen, so shall they run."*

The parallels between the above passages are striking.

\* Joel describes the locusts as *"**the appearance of horses**."*

Revelation describes them as *"**like unto horses**".*

\* Joel says *"so shall they **run**."*

Revelation depicts them as *"**running to battle**."*

There can be no doubt they are describing the same event.

Joel 2:5 - *"Like **the noise of chariots** on the tops of mountains shall they leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devoureth the stubble, as a **strong people set in battle array**."*

Revelation 9:9 - *"And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as **the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle**."*

Joel's prophecy of the **"noise of chariots... in battle array"** is the same as Revelation's **"sound of chariots... running to battle."**

## 9

## THE LOCUSTS ARE ALSO "FOUR WINDS"

In the prophetic book of Revelation, angels under divine control, are holding the **four winds**, which want to break loose and rush over the face of the whole earth, bearing destruction and death in its path. Compare these two passages:

Revelation 9:3-4 - *"And there came out of the smoke **LOCUSTS** upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should **not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.**"*

Revelation 7:1-4 - *"And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding **THE FOUR WINDS** of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, Saying, **Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.**"*

Rev.9:3-4

Rev.7:1-4

v.3	Locusts	v.1	Four winds
v.4	Not hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree	v.3	Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees
v.4	Only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads	v.4	Till we have sealed servants of our God in their foreheads

# 10

## SCORPIONS

The militant Islamic armies are also called scorpions.

Revelation 9:2-3 - *"And there came out of the smoke **locusts** upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the **scorpions** of the earth have power."*

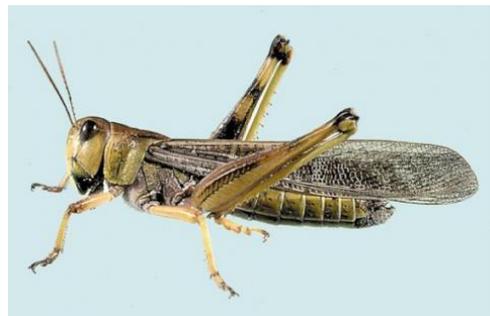
Says an historian: *"The barbed Arabs, swift as **locusts**, and armed like **scorpions**, were ever ready to dart away in a moment."*

One of the unique characteristics of a scorpion is that when it is cornered with no way to escape, it will **commit suicide** by stinging itself to death.

**Fundamentalist Islam teaches its people to commit suicide.**

You will see these symbols recurring as we explore the prophecies later:

- the locusts
- war horses
- four winds
- scorpions



# 11

## A COSMIC WAR

Before we go any further, let's get this straight. Today the world is tense with fear. The danger of a global war involving Islam, the West and other powers grows daily.

And people are asking, if there is a God who is all-powerful and who cares about us, why does He let this happen?

### **"Barbers don't exist"?**

"I don't believe that God exists, " said the barber.

"Oh?" asked the customer, "Would you kindly describe for me this God you do not believe in?"

"Look, I don't believe in a God who would be pleased for us all to suffer like we do," said the barber. "Look at all the terrorist bombings, sick people, abandoned children, and all that? If God existed, I can't imagine Him delighting in so much suffering."

"Oh," said the customer, "*I don't believe in a God like that either.*"

"What?"

The barber finished his job and the customer left the shop. Just after he left the barbershop, he saw a man in the street with long, stringy, dirty hair and an untrimmed beard. He looked dirty and unkempt.

The customer turned back and entered the barber shop again and he said to the barber: "You know what? Barbers do not exist."

"How can you say that?" asked the surprised barber. "I am here, and I am a barber. And I just worked on you!"

"No!" the customer exclaimed. "Barbers don't exist because if they did, there would be no people with dirty long hair and untrimmed beards, like that man outside."

"Ah, but barbers DO exist! What happens is, people do not come to me."

"Exactly!"- affirmed the customer. "That's the point! God, too, DOES exist! What happens, is, people don't go to Him. They try to live without Him. That's why there's so much pain and suffering in the world."

The fact that you and I raise such issues shows that we have an inbuilt sense of justice. So where do you think we got our sense of justice from, in the first place?

It is only when *all* the facts are known that some situations make sense. Likewise, when we know *all* the factors involved, God allowing things to happen is understandable.

## **Behind the T.V. news: The Big Picture**

Now for the BIG news... *the overall picture.*

We step behind the scenes, and see a deadly drama is being played out. It is speeding toward its final showdown. It is much BIGGER than you and I ever suspected. The conflict is between two major players. The action is on this planet. This little world has been hijacked. And the action is being watched with breathless interest by all the universe. You and I are actors in this drama.

How it began is revealed to us, and how it will end. It began, we are informed, with a real "Star Wars" rebellion.

Were you aware that the earliest civilizations knew about this?

A Babylonian tablet calls it "The Revolt in Heaven".

Mexican tradition likewise recounts the war in heaven, the fall of Zontemonque and the other rebellious spirits, the Creation, and the subsequent entrapment of mankind by the rebel.

Yes, they understood that this little planet had been hijacked. And that a conflict was being waged between two major personalities... and their followers.

America, Obama, the European community, Arabs, Israelis, the Pope, China... these are just minor players. You and I are caught up in it too.

According to the Bible, there is not only a physical kingdom or realm, but also a spiritual realm, unseen by the human eye. Both were created by God. That spiritual world also has kings, rulers and authorities ruling over it. (Colossians 1:15-16)

## **Heart of the universe**

Most facts concerning the universe are still unknown to science. It would be presumptuous to imagine that we know as much as one octillionth of what the universe holds in store. Our planet is a mere speck on the edge of the galaxy. But it is believed that all the galaxies revolve around a central axis. This grand central region – the crown jewel of the universe, and the governing center – is generally given the name "heaven".

## **It began out there!**

And that's where the rebellion began... in the deep reaches of space –at a real place, the governing center of the universe.

Lucifer, a brilliant, handsome and powerful commander, was close to the Creator.

Lucifer had it pretty good. But he had a problem – pride. He became dissatisfied with his own position. He wanted it all. And he allowed himself to fall into the attitude of “**Get**”. He became vain and envious. He thought that he could rule as well as, or better than, his Creator.

Though he was respected and loved by the legions of beings under him, that seemed not enough. It was unlimited power he wanted, unlimited control, independence.

So he proceeded to spread his discontent to them.

“The Creator does not care for His subjects,” he asserted. “His laws are tyrannical. I can set up a better government.” The issue was the Creator's law of love, a law of “**Give**” - as opposed to Lucifer’s desire to “**Get**”.

A charismatic personality, in high position of trust, Lucifer, was so respected, that he managed to convince many that his way of self centeredness was better than Creator's way of unselfish service.

Lucifer’s ambition was to take control. And war on a grand scale - a great spiritual battle – took place.

Perhaps you’ve imagined a mythical devil with horns, hoofs and a pitchfork. Forget it.

That’s pure myth. Lucifer, according to the Bible, was a glorious, majestic being. He was created perfect, happy and free.

But by choosing open rebellion, he made of himself a devil.

## **Evil = absence of God**

No, God did not create a devil. Lucifer, by choosing open rebellion – by choosing to cut off his connection with God - made of himself a devil.

Evil itself is a mystery, but it is *not* another face of God, the good Creator. Evil is the exclusion of good – separation from God.

God created a superbly beautiful and wise being. He invested him with power above all the other created beings. His name Lucifer means “son of the morning”, “bright and shining one”. He was a free moral agent with the power of choice. But he became filled with ambition to be higher than his Maker.

It was spiritual mutiny.

Lucifer, one of God’s mighty cherubs, rebelled against Him. “And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against [Lucifer]; and [Lucifer] fought and his angels.” (Rev.12:7)

This rebel would become known as the devil, or Satan (meaning “opponent”). Satan was *the product of his own choice*.

## **The fate of the universe at stake**

So what would God do now? Not only had His government been challenged, but His very character had been called into question.

His reputation for truthfulness and for concern about His subjects was at stake.

Here was a conflict involving not a single world, but the entire universe. The fate of all who were loyal to the Creator was at stake.

## **The stain**

Those who were loyal must have had problems. After all, such an accusation as Lucifer had made would inevitably leave a *stain* that could only be erased by a long and careful demonstration of integrity, concern and wisdom.

Would the Creator respond with His superior power? Would He snuff out opposition with one great mushroom cloud?

## **An unknown deadly “virus”**

You might well ask, why didn't God do just that – snuff out rebellion before it got worse? It might have saved us all a lot of future pain.

Here's why. When the rebellion began, it seemed incredible that “sin” could be as dangerous as the Supreme One said it was.

Shall we ponder this for a moment? Suppose the Creator had destroyed Lucifer there and then. Those who were still loyal might well have concluded: “Look what God has done! Perhaps Lucifer was right! God *must* be a tyrant.” And they would have remained loyal out of fear.

So the Creator decided to fight the rebellion with LOVE. Lucifer's character must be UNMASKED. This mysterious virus of “sin” must be allowed to show its results to all. The Creator would place Himself on trial before His subjects and let them see just who it is that cares.

He wanted His creation to regard Him with love, not fear. No wonder, then, that He had to give the rebellion virus (or the spirit of evil, if you wish) a chance to develop – to show to the onlooking universe the true character of this spirit of evil and its effect. Its character had to be understood, for the future security of all. *He wanted to MAKE SURE it would NEVER HAPPEN AGAIN.*

## **Banished**

Lucifer, in open revolt, had disowned the supremacy of the Creator, and set up a rebel independence.

Now Lucifer, with his sympathisers, was banished from heaven.

And with what sorrow! The unfallen worlds, as they watched, must have joined in the tears.

This event, as we discovered, is recorded in the oral and written history of many ancient nations – from Babylonia to Mexico.

Now bitter and simmering for revenge, these rebels looked for a new homeland – and headed for our world. Planet Earth, newly created, was singing with life.

This would be the battlefield. From here Lucifer and his legion would fight back. Here Lucifer would set up his kingdom and prove that his plan was better.

The main stage of the war now shifted to earth, but the target of Lucifer's rage was still the One who threw him out, the Prince of God.

## **The original perfect world - no suffering**

It is recorded in our racial memory that we were given a perfect world.

It was a Golden Age, says the *Mahabharata*, an epic *Indian* poem containing the history of the world. In that First Age there was no disease, hatred or evil.

The same idea was echoed by the *Greeks*, of an original Golden Age when human beings lived with no evil desires, without guilt or crime.

The *Chinese* likewise recall that First Age as one of perfect harmony.

And the *native Americans* speak of an Age of a First People who were happy and at peace with each other. All food was plentiful, with no need to plant or work to get food.

The ancient *Sumerian* writings speak vividly of a time when animals were neither wild nor harmful, when there was no rivalry or enmity among men, when there was plenty, security, harmony, everywhere. (S.N. Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*. Philadelphia, Frontispiece. For corrections made after additional fragments of the same story were found, see Kramer, *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, vol. 88, 1968, p. 109)

Indeed, there is *a common racial memory* of a once perfect world... of an age that *did not know suffering*.

As you know, this is a very different beginning from what is taught today in school, that the sordid and wasteful mechanism of evolution (embodying tooth and claw, painful upward struggle) was used to produce mankind.

Some will assume that God Himself used evolution to produce mankind. But such a God would be a “cruel Creator”. You could not call Him a God of love.

But, as it is, the racial memory of mankind and the *Intelligence Report* are in agreement about the fact that ***all was perfect in the beginning***. Don’t ignore this. It’s in our history.

In this beautiful world, our first parents had everything perfectly fashioned for their needs and enjoyment.

## **Physical and spiritual laws**

And the Creator gave us spiritual laws, which, when followed, would guarantee our continuing happiness and safety.

We know from experience that ***physical laws*** operate (so if you jump off a roof, gravity will pull you to the ground, or if you put your hand on a fire you will get burned. You sow a crop of potatoes, you will harvest potatoes, not beans).

Along with physical laws by which this universe is run, we also experience ***spiritual laws*** (so that if you sow joy to others you will reap joy from them, or if you treat others violently, you will bring ultimate suffering upon yourself). And our actions often cause others – innocent though they may be – to suffer.

And there are ***spiritual laws*** that work in the same way. Thus...

- \* If you ***sow joy*** to others you will ***reap joy*** from them.
- \* If you treat others ***badly***, you will bring ultimate ***suffering*** upon yourself. Does that make sense?

The standards of ***right and wrong*** are UNCHANGEABLE. They ***do not shift*** from one era to another. They are ***not relative***.

Right and wrong are...

- \* **Not** determined by each individual.
- \* **Not** arrived at by trial and error
- \* **Not** established by consensus thinking.

Like the physical, so with the spiritual laws. They were given by our Maker. ***Man did not originate*** right or wrong. ***These standards were handed down to him.***

These are not an external system of rules, but they are statements about ***the reality of existence.***

So these laws shouldn't be compared to the "law of the land", but to the laws of physics.

If they tell us how to act, it's because they first tell us ***how things are designed to work.***

So ***obeying these laws*** is the only way to experience life as it really is and should be.

So it makes sense that the basic ***reason for suffering*** in the world is ***our abuse of these laws.*** We have exercised our free choice to cut ourselves off from our Maker. It is we who are responsible for that.

### **Why not make it impossible for us to abuse those laws?**

Wait a minute! If there's an all powerful God, and if he's benevolent, then why didn't he make it impossible for us to abuse those laws?

Okay, think now. Just suppose you had a fourteen year old daughter, would you let her ski?

Sure. You'd tell her to be careful. You'd give her some good advice. Then you would tell her to go off and ski.

Would you run behind her and molly coddle her? What if she fell and skinned her face?

She would learn to be more careful.

So although you have power to intervene – and even to prevent her pain – you would show your respect for her by allowing her to make her own mistakes and learn from them. Does that make sense?

And it makes sense that if there is a God and he loves what He has created, then He'll also want us to experience the greatest happiness possible, right?

He could have made you as a *robot*, so that when He pressed a button, you would get down on your knees and say, 'I love you... I love you...' - no matter what you really felt about the matter. No freedom in that!

Who would want to be a robot? Would you like to be married to a robot chatty doll?... so that whenever you pulled a string you would hear the mechanical words, 'I love you?'

Man, what kind of love would that be? Love is voluntary. That's what makes it so beautiful.

But – and we know this is a fact – He gave to each of His creatures *free will*. Freedom to acknowledge His existence or deny it. Freedom to love Him or to spit in His face. Freedom to run the world and even to make a mess. Unless you can CHOOSE, you can never know optimum happiness.

Honestly, I think that this must be one of the most winsome, beautiful and basic things about our Creator – His love of

liberty. Ability to choose has been inbuilt into us. The greatest power you have is the power to choose.

The blame for suffering lies not with God but with our daily choices. To remove suffering NOW, God would have to remove our ability to make choices.

The perfection of the interactive DNA code in our bodies does suggest an all-powerful, all-knowing, wise Creator who knows how not to make a mistake. I believe there is enough evidence in this world of One who is compassionate, caring and patient with us. Are we human beings more fair, just and wise than the One who designed our DNA, whose parts work together for our physical good?

The beautiful harmony between the created beings and their loving Creator changed when Lucifer's (Satan's) mob dropped in.

Lucifer, his heart bitter for revenge against God, was determined to wreck this state of happiness. And he soon planted in their minds his own attitude of "*Get*". "Go it alone," he urged. "Be independent. You don't need God."

So foolishly they joined the rebellion.

# 12

## PLANET HIJACKED

Ever since our first parents joined the rebellion, our planet has been caught up in a conflict between the forces of good and those of the Lucifer Legion. Satan is trying to get revenge on God for what happened in heaven.

Might this help us understand why our world has descended into such a mess?

It is true that we are responsible for our own actions. But we need to lift our eyes to see the bigger and more sinister play going on behind the scenes – super-energised by evil forces.

There can be no doubt that these forces have permeated politics, religion, science, the media, education and business.

Yes, it is time we all faced the truth, however startling. This cosmic war being waged by Lucifer and his hosts for the control of the human race is no myth! And they work through human leaders to attain it.

When the facts are known, these entities are the REAL driving force behind the poverty, violence and corruption.

### **A “fall” from paradise known**

Did you know that nearly all writings of ancient peoples worldwide tell the same story, that of *a fall* from this original paradise state of peace, love and happiness?

Sacred records affirmed that there had been a departure from

harmony with the Creator. Such accounts are in the oral and written history of many ancient nations.

The “Fall” as it was termed, became fixed *in our racial memory*. In many traditions this “Fall” is described as the origin of our sense of separateness, our sense of being alienated and at odds with each other.

## **Alienated and dying**

When they cut themselves off from the Life-Giver, the natural consequence would be death. From that day, the process of dying commenced within their bodies, cell by cell. This process would be passed on to all their children.

Lucifer had won the first round. Man was now in his grasp, alienated from his Creator.

What would the Creator do now?

Two things.

**Firstly**, they were now subject to the curse of **death**.

You may wonder, how could a good God institute such a penalty? Well, you can be sure He knew what He was doing. Even today, so much evil is messing up the world from men and women with brief life spans –up to the day they die. If we were to live forever, this world might well have been destroyed *by us* long ago.

It was an act of mercy for the Creator to bar them from endless life. If He had not done so, and they had continued to live endlessly, they would gradually have become more and more ill as time passed. Then no matter how agonising their illness became, they would have still lived on with no possibility of any release from their suffering. Death, then, became an act of

mercy on the part of our Designer. It was the only way He could limit their suffering.

Can you see it? Death was necessary – to place a limitation on the pain that was about to come... pain resulting from mankind's choice to sever himself from God.

**Secondly**, there was another response from the Creator: **a promise of hope and rescue**. We shall learn about this in a later section of this report.

## **Death is not natural - it's an intruder**

We are so used to death that we take it for granted that death is a natural, normal, essential part of our existence. But it was not always so. The fact is, death is an enemy, an intrusion, that need not be.

Dr Linus C. Pauling, world-renowned chemist and winner of two Nobel prizes provides an insight into the reality:

*"Death is unnatural.... Theoretically, man is quite immortal. His body tissues replace themselves. He is a self-repairing machine. And yet he gets old and dies, and the reasons for this are still a mystery"*

Yes, life should have continued joyously, on and on. But now, separated from the Life-Giver, the natural consequence would be death. There you have the reason why we die. And so, from that day, the process of dying commenced within their bodies, cell by cell. This process would be passed on to all their children.

Because God could not use trickery, Lucifer had won the first round. Man was now in his grasp, alienated from his Creator.

## **"Now, just a minute! I'm a good person"**

None of us is blameless. Each of us has gone his own way. I remember protesting, "But I'm a good person...I don't steal... or commit adultery...I'm a good neighbour. I even solicit funds for the Blind Society."

"That may be true," said my friend. "but have you ever wished someone bad? Have you ever told a 'white lie'? Ever been impatient with your spouse? Have you ever wanted to have your neighbour's house or car? You have broken the spiritual laws."

I looked at him aghast, while he laid it straight on me, "If you commit only three sinful acts each day, you would be guilty of 1,095 sins each year. Multiply that by your age.... and you have some idea of how sinful you may be! SHOCKING, ISN'T IT?"

Well, as much as I hated to admit it, he was right. It is good to recognise we have a sin problem. Then we can seek help.

Suppose a person with *cancer* never recognises his or her condition, or seeks help?

Let's face it. If I say I have no sin I am deceiving myself.

Yes, by violating His law, we have severed ourselves from our only source of all life; cutting ourselves off means death. What a predicament we are in! We are doomed to die. And we cannot extricate ourselves from this. We are trapped. We sure need help.

## **Lucifer, Prince of Earth**

Our first parents were appointed custodians over this planet. But they gave in to Lucifer – and he took over the world. That makes him the defacto Prince of this world, even its pseudo-god.

(John 12:31; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Ephesians 2:2; 6:12; Revelation 12:9)

As descendants of our first parents, we inherit a weakened moral nature, the tendency of which is to do evil rather than good. Our surrender to Lucifer's mob has brought death to everything upon earth. *What the Bible says about this is exactly consistent with observable fact.*

## **The battle over every person**

It is crucial to understand the great conflict going on between invisible agencies, the long running feud between loyal and disloyal super beings. Over every person they are striving. This is no make-believe conflict. It is not mimic battles in which we are engaged. We have to contend with the most powerful spirit enemies. But our individual destiny rests on each of us.

If we could only know the number of the Lucifer Legion, their devices and their activity, we would be far less laid back about this issue.

You'd better believe it. This guy Satan is more powerful than the president of the United States – or the pope. The evil entities over whom he rules do his bidding. They appoint human agencies. And they instigate all the evil we see in our world.

## **Unseen powers behind the scenes**

In mercy, their forms are beyond the light spectrum, so that we are not able to see them. Nevertheless, they are, by condensation, capable of visibility. And in spiritualistic séances, this occurs.

Lucifer and his gang can materialise (take physical form) and interact with our dimension. They are as real as you and I. They have consciousness and personality, just as we do.

You'd better believe it. Though normally invisible to us, these other forces – inter-dimensional beings – are indeed here with us. And they're intensely active. The messengers of light and the messengers of Lucifer are engaged in a relentless conflict. And they are in a tug of war for every person on earth.

And this earth has become the theater of a drawn out, incessant contest with those hijackers.

Subsequent history is a story of moves and counter-moves. Behind the interplay of nations, the two unseen major players – God and Lucifer – are guiding history to its **PLANNED CLIMAX**.

Notice this comment in the Intelligence Report (the Bible):

*We are not struggling against people made with flesh and blood, but against persons without bodies – the evil rulers of the unseen world, those mighty satanic beings of darkness who rule this world; against huge numbers of wicked spirits in the spirit realm. (Ephesians 6:12)*

Clearly, we're not up against mere human enemies, but opponents who are not human – spirit enemies, diabolical and powerful.

These malicious spirits are in rebellion against the Supreme One. And they've brought their rebellion to this planet.

## **“Other forces here”**

As an earlier Prime Minister of Britain, the Marquis of Salisbury, acknowledged, *“We are in the presence of forces far larger than we can wield.”*

Sir Edward Grey, a former British Foreign Secretary concurred. Speaking in the House of Commons on November 27, 1911, he said: *“It is really as if in the atmosphere of the world there were some mischievous influence at work, which troubles and excites every part of it.”*

## **Why God keeps "hands off"**

At the time of his rebellion, Lucifer accused God of being a tyrant who would not allow him (Lucifer) freedom to have his own way. Thus, when Lucifer claimed he could set up a better government than God, it was necessary that he be given the opportunity and time to discredit himself, so that when he is finally destroyed, no one will have any doubts about God's justice and love.

When the rebellion began, it had seemed incredible that the “sin” virus could be as dangerous as the Supreme One said it was. It would take time for the Legion of Lucifer to be discredited.

This would be his battlefield. From here he would fight back. Here he would set up his kingdom and "prove" that his way was better.

So Earth became the lesson book to the universe concerning this “sin” thing and where it would lead, the theatre where the drama was to be acted out, scene by scene. As Shakespeare perceived, *“All the world’s a stage and men are only players.”* To let it play out its course, was the only way the lesson could be learned.

Such a demonstration would need time for its results to be evident. But as the universe proceeded to watch the centuries of hatred, heartache and death on planet Earth, they would begin to understand. They would watch Lucifer's kingdom in operation.

And it would take a whole long series of events to be enacted out before God's love for His creatures could be vindicated.

The Creator's "hands off" strategy to allow Lucifer the freedom to discredit himself, will ultimately be seen as the wisest. God will not intervene in our lives without our permission (such as when people pray, requesting Him to intervene.)

Like it or not, we are all involved. Our first parents' choice to allow Lucifer's rule placed the whole world in jeopardy. And individually, by not wanting God in our lives, we have placed ourselves under Satan's dominion. Our Creator simply honors our individual choice.

When things go wrong, we tend to judge things by the short term. Isn't it a common knee-jerk reaction to blame God?

But listen, if your dog bit you, would you kick your wife? Of course not. Then, why don't you and I stop blaming God for the world's problems? Let's be fair. Place the blame where it belongs.

## **Our fault, not His**

We are appalled by terrorist bombings, school shootings, and so on? And we might well ask, where was God?

After the 9/11 attacks in New York, Billy Graham's daughter was interviewed on the Early Show and Jane Clayson asked her "How could God let something like this happen?"

Anne Graham gave an extremely profound response. She said:

*I believe that God is deeply saddened by this, just as we are, but for years we've been telling God to get out of our schools, to get out of our government and to get out of our lives. And, being the gentleman that He is, I believe that He has calmly backed out. How can we expect God to give us His blessing and His protection if we demand that He leave us alone?*

In the *Eighty's Club Newsletter* of March 2005 (the Eighty's Club is a Sri Lankan social club in Melbourne, Australia), appeared the following article, inserted by Richard Young, editor:

*"Let's see..... I think it started when Madeline Murray O'Hare complained she didn't want any prayer in our schools. **We said OK.***

*"Then someone said you better not read the Bible in school... it says thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not steal, and love your neighbour as yourself. **We said OK.***

*"Dr. Benjamin Spock said that we shouldn't spank our children because their little personalities would be warped and we might damage their self-esteem. (Dr. Spock's son committed suicide). We said an expert should know what he's talking about. **We said OK.***

*"Then someone said that school teachers and principals should not discipline children when they misbehaved because they did not want any bad publicity, and they surely did not want to be sued. **We said OK.***

*"Then some of our top elected officials said it did not matter what we did in private as long as we did our jobs. And, agreeing with them, we said it did not*

*matter to us what anyone did in private as long as we had jobs and the economy was good.*

*"Then someone said, "Let us print magazines with pictures of nude people and call it wholesome, down-to-earth appreciation of the beauty of the body." We said **OK**.*

*"Then someone else took that appreciation a step further and publicised pictures of nude children and then went further still, making them available to all and sundry on the Internet. **We said OK** - they were entitled to their freedom of expression.*

*"Then the entertainment industry said, "Let's make TV shows and movies that promote profanity, violence and illicit sex. And let's record music that encourages rape, drugs, murder, suicide and satanic themes." We said, "It's just entertainment; it has no adverse effect and nobody takes it seriously anyway, so go right ahead."*

Now we're asking ourselves why our children have no conscience; why they don't know right from wrong and why it doesn't bother them to kill strangers, their classmates, and themselves.

If you think about it long and hard enough, you can probably figure it out: **'WE REAP WHAT WE SOW'**.

Funny how simple it is for people to trash God and then wonder why the world's going to hell.

Funny how lewd, crude, vulgar and obscene articles pass freely through cyberspace, but public discussion of God is suppressed in the school and workplace.

*“Dear God, why didn't you save the little girl killed in her classroom? Sincerely, Concerned Student” .....*

*“Dear Concerned Student, I am not allowed in schools. Sincerely, God.”*

## **Natural disasters**

Lucifer's forces have the ability to interfere with weather and generate hurricanes, droughts and floods. They can manipulate natural forces, to trigger earthquakes and tsunamis. However, their destructive powers are restrained from fully destroying this rebellious world by the power of our merciful Creator.

Are natural disasters acts of God? We are pointing the finger in the wrong direction – although, as we've noted, God can and does intervene for our good when, as free-choice beings, we give Him our permission.

The Bible gives us some insight to what's going on here. It declares that when Lucifer was cast onto this earth, a “loud voice in heaven” was heard to say, *“Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea, because the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with raging anger, because he knows that he has but a short time.”* (Revelation 12:12) He is declared to be *“the ruler of the kingdom of the air”* (Ephesians 2:2) and *“the prince of this world.”* (John 12:31) We are warned that *“the whole world is under the control of the evil one.”* (1 John 5:19)

Indeed, even now he is at work. In accidents and calamities by sea and land, in great fires, in fierce tornadoes, floods, tsunamis, and earthquakes, in every place and in a thousand forms, the Legion of Lucifer is exercising its power. The reign of evil must run its course until its time is due.

By contrast, *God's truthfulness*, his *sharing of human suffering*, and his *matchless love* in stooping down in an *amazing rescue plan for mankind*, would ultimately make the truth evident to all.

**Lucifer's response  
helps us understand  
why the innocent suffer**

Not surprisingly, the Legion of Lucifer were furious to learn of this intervention plan. And in a succession of moves and countermoves, they would do all within their power to either thwart or discredit the plan.

This is why the earth is temporarily in such a mess.

But take courage in the thought that God loves you very much - and has the power and willingness to help you.

# 13

## OPERATION RESCUE

When our first parents opened their eyes they must have been spellbound at the delicate beauty around them. All was perfect harmony. Both of them felt the full vigor of youth. Their minds were clear and quick to grasp new ideas. Both were created with limitless possibilities.

Would the Creator immediately turn His back on the happy couple He had made? Would He leave them to speculate about how they got here?

### **Our Maker's response to our suffering**

During that initial day and regularly thereafter, Somebody appeared visible in human form and talked with them. This glorious Being explained to them that there would be endless wonders to explore and provide them with constant pleasure.

So it was that the Creator fashioned for mankind a paradise world, and appointed man to look after it. And man was given laws – both physical and spiritual – to ensure his unending happiness. Violate them and misery would follow. And, as noted, we were given free choice.

They were not left in ignorance concerning Satan's rebellion. They were warned of his presence. But they had nothing to fear. Only disobedience could place them in any danger.

The Being who loved them had spoken. That should have been enough for them - if they loved Him.

But they had free choice - and they chose to experiment with rebellion – to turn their back on their Creator, break the laws and do their own thing. They allowed the rebel to overcome them.

Once this occurred, the harmony was marred.

They were now alienated from their Maker. They were biased against Him by their new, rebellious attitude. They were aware that He had surrounded them with evidences of His love, yet they had failed Him. Rebellion had marred the original harmony.

And it was worse. Now that they were separated from the Life-giver, the natural consequence would be death. From that day, they began to die, cell by cell. This process of death would be passed on to all their descendants.

The whole universe is based on physical and spiritual laws. The spiritual law had been violated. And every broken law brings a penalty. But would it solve the problem for God to simply say, ‘I’ll forget about that law that you’ve broken, so there’ll be no penalty’?

No. the divine law, which had been violated, could not be altered to save the rebels. That royal law – the standard on which harmony throughout the universe rests – must stand unshaken. To abolish the law would have immortalised rebellion.

Not to mention the misery. What is more, human nature was so weakened by wrong-doing, they had no strength to resist the power of the Lucifer Legion.

For the law to be upheld would mean that man, separated from his Life Giver, faced death forever. The violation of the law must meet the penalty, death. The majesty of law, the very

stability of the government, required that the sentence be executed.

A hopeless situation, if you ask me.

So what was the Creator to do? It would have been quite simple for Him to immediately snuff man out, right? But He loved what He had created. And He was filled with compassion.

### **After we blew it – the rescue plan**

God was not satisfied that man should be forever cut off from Him. Man was now infected with sin. And sin had to be destroyed. But, in His foreknowledge - even before sin intruded - the Creator already had a plan.

And He communicated it to our first parents. Now He kindled a flame of hope upon the ashes of Adam and Eve's despair.

So what was this rescue plan?

### **Taking our penalty upon Himself**

To do this, the Creator *Himself* would

- \* enter enemy territory where Satan claimed dominion
- \* humble Himself to take feeble human form
- \* resist the Legion of Lucifer, without falling under

their power

- \* go over *the same ground* as we do
- \* face all *the same testings* we have to endure
- \* suffer *the same disadvantages and pains,*

but SUCCEED in each point where we fail. (Thus *he understands our weaknesses.*)

He offered to *credit his success to each of us*, counting his perfection to cover our imperfect state, so you and I could be declared clean again.

Then he could stand *in our place*, taking upon himself our guilt and suffer its *penalty* – and credit that payment to us, *potentially securing pardon for each of us*.

Thus the authority of *the universal law* would stand *unshaken*, even though it cost the life of the this Deliverer. The law and the love of the Creator would thus both be established.

The love of God thus *initiated rescue* for each one of us.

A TV personality was stopped for speeding. As the officer wrote out the ticket, the celebrity handed him his driving license. The officer, suddenly recognised him, and exclaimed, “My wife loves your show. She watches you all the time. Here’s what I’ll do. I can’t tear up the ticket. The law must be enforced. But let me pay the fine for you. Here’s the \$50. Now please don’t speed again.”

Thus the validity of the law was upheld, but the law-breaker was *made right with the government*. *Justice* was achieved, as well as *mercy*.

This is so great, it is beyond our limited experience. What a great mystery that the Maker of all worlds, the Judge of all destinies, should lay aside his glory and **HUMILIATE HIMSELF** to become one of us... *to serve us!*

**He stooped to  
the lowest for us**

A vital part of his coming was to *reach down to the lowest levels* – identifying especially with the outcasts of society.

Predictably, religious leaders criticised him for hanging out in public with “sinners” – including the notoriously corrupt tax collectors, and even prostitutes.

But he responded, “***It is not the healthy that need a doctor, but the sick.*** I have not come to save the good, but the lost.”

So he met people where they were, and ***changed them.*** Because he has ***reached down*** to us where we are, he ***can also lift us up*** to where he is.

History reveals ***no other life lived*** on earth like that of Jesus.... pure... loving... and ***without fault.*** (For evidence, see *The Forbidden Secret*, pages 366 to 370. [www.beforeus.com/secret.html](http://www.beforeus.com/secret.html))

His death was no accident. At his night arrest, he could easily have slipped away. But he let himself be bound, tortured and condemned. Evil men might choose to crucify him, but it was he who ***gave himself into their hands*** to do it. It was his choice... his plan. And he prophesied he would do it. He laid down his life and voluntarily shed his precious blood that we might live.

He was whisked from one mock trial to another all night, until a verdict could be secured against him. He was stripped, mocked, and a whip lashed his flesh. In fake honour they tossed a royal robe over him and pressed a crown of thorns into his head. And they spat on him. (Matt.27:30) Spitting, especially in another person’s face, is a universal sign of hatred and disdain, and therefore is considered taboo in many parts of the world. Spitting is reserved only for someone loathed.

Then he is forced to bear a heavy wooden cross to the execution site.

A vast crowd follows Jesus from the courthouse to Skull Hill. Place of death.

The execution chief stops... and orders the crosses to be set in the rock, where deep holes have already been drilled.

It is an excessively brutal way to die. They strip a convict naked and flog him till his chest and back are in ribbons. Then they arrange his legs uncomfortably and drive blunt 15 to 20 cm (6 to 8 inch) nails through his ankles and wrists into a wooden frame.

No one ever went down to such horrific depths, ***bearing the sins of the entire human race on his own shoulders*** and being mocked and crucified by the people he had created.

I'll struggle for the rest of my life to grasp the enormity of his sacrifice.

With genuine love he cried out on the cross, "*Father, forgive them; for they do not know what they are doing.*" (Luke 23:34)

The death process for our sins had begun. And now, as that ***Blameless One*** hung on the cross, as he felt the crushing weight, the horror, of the ***sins of the world*** that he had taken upon himself to shoulder – your guilt and mine – as he felt it descending upon him, the agony grew unbearable. ***So great was the anguish that his physical pain was hardly felt.***

Pressed by the fearful thought that he now faced ***separation forever*** from God the Father, due to the world's sins laid upon him, an ***agonizing horror*** came over him – the same agony that rejecters of God's love will ultimately feel.

***Jesus went through that, to save you and me from it.*** He endured an intensity of pain and suffering we can't begin to fathom. It was the greatest example of mercy and grace the world will ever know.

**He took our place.**

- \* We sinned... He died.
- \* We were guilty... He was punished.
- \* We deserved death... He gave his life.
- \* We rejected him... He accepted us.

**The cross proved God's love.**

His death answered the question as to whether the Father and Son had sufficient love for mankind to exercise self-denial and a spirit of sacrifice, so that humans could be saved.

The spotless Son of God hung upon the cross, his flesh lacerated with whip strokes; those hands that so often reached out to help people, now nailed to wooden bars; those feet so tireless on errands of love, spiked to the cross; that royal head pierced by a mock crown of thorns; those quivering lips shaped to the cry of woe.

And all that he endured: the blood drops that flowed from his head, his hands, his feet, his back; the agony that racked his frame; the unutterable anguish that filled his soul for lost man... It was for me... and you.

He who calmed angry waves and walked the foam-capped billows, who made devils tremble and disease flee, who opened blind eyes and called dead men to life... offers himself upon the cross as a sacrifice.

And this from his love to us! He endures the penalty of divine justice for your sake... and, mine. His death proves his love. What a triumph!

## **It proved who it was that cared.**

For thousands of years, the forces of evil had been in a tussle for the control of the human race.

It was claimed by the prophets that behind man's rebellion were evil entities. They had denied God's truthfulness and His concern for His subjects. Having initially rebelled against the government of heaven, they had been cast out. Rather than destroy them there and then (which could have been misunderstood), God decided to fight the rebellion with LOVE.

Lucifer, their leader, it was held, had shifted his battlefield to planet Earth — and led our first parents into rebellion.

"Go it alone," he urged. "Be independent. You don't need God." And we fell for it.

When the rebellion began, it had seemed incredible that sin could be as dangerous as God said it was.

But when the universe saw the centuries of hatred, heartache and death on planet Earth, they began to understand. They watched Lucifer's (Satan's) kingdom in operation.

Then they saw God's Son enter this enemy territory to save mankind. He lived and suffered with us — showing us by his example how to overcome sin.

Then he went to the cross. That showed the value God had placed upon men and women. It was the ultimate evidence of God's great love.

But Satan's unquenchable hatred toward the Son of God was revealed in the way he carefully planned the betrayal, mock trial and shameful crucifixion.

This opened the eyes of the universe to his true criminal character. Heavenly beings were horror-stricken that Lucifer, a former one of their number, could fall so far as to be capable of such cruelty. Now every sentiment of sympathy or pity which they ever felt for him in his exile was quenched from their hearts.

So there is Lucifer, professing to be clothed in celestial light — yet with envy he exercises revenge on an innocent Person, against the divine Son of God who has, with unprecedented self-denial and love, come from heaven and assumed the nature of lost mankind.

Now Satan appears hideous! He has committed such a horrible crime against heaven, that heavenly beings shudder with horror.

The last link of sympathy with him is broken. He is finished, as far as the inhabitants of other worlds are concerned.

He has revealed his true character as a liar and a murderer.

Lucifer is discredited. Jesus Christ is vindicated. What a triumph!

And because of his death in our stead, we can now live. Through his sacrifice, we are *granted forgiveness* and given a brand-new start. His death in our place has bridged the gulf that separates us from God...

Yes, it's a mystery that he loved you and me enough to do it.  
**That's God's answer to our suffering.**

## **He broke the power of death**

But, as the Creator of life he did some-thing that *human science is inadequate* to explain: He arose again, proving that even

death could not conquer him.

Some of the world's best legal minds have combed through the numerous strands of **evidence** that Jesus rose back to life, and declare it to be rock solid.

*“I know pretty well what evidence is; and I tell you, **such evidence as that for the Resurrection has never broken down yet.**”* (Lord Lyndhurst, Solicitor-General of the British government; Attorney-General of Great Britain; three times High Chancellor of Cambridge)

*“In its favour as living truth there exists such **overwhelming evidence, positive and negative, factual and circumstantial, that no intelligent jury in the world could fail to bring in a verdict that the resurrection story is true.**”* (Lord Darling, a former Chief Justice of England)

*“I claim to be an historian. My approach to classics is historical. And I tell you that the evidence for the life, the death, and the resurrection of Christ is **better authenticated than most of the facts of ancient history.**”* (E.M. Blaiklock, professor of classics, Auckland University)

There is HISTORICAL **evidence**.

There is ARCHAEOLOGICAL **evidence**.

There is LEGAL **evidence**.

**Science can't explain it, but it did occur.** You owe it to yourself to examine this evidence. (To acquaint yourself with the facts, please study *The Forbidden Secret*, chs. 34 to 40. [www.beforeus.com/secret.html](http://www.beforeus.com/secret.html))

Jesus' **power over death seals his claim** to be the Son of God, the **ONLY WAY you can receive immortality**. Don't dismiss it.

Listen, now, this is real. In fact, all over the world, ancient civilizations recorded this promise that had been given

concerning the Coming One.

Of course, any person on death row (and that's all of us) could still exercise his freedom of choice – whether to personally accept that rescue provision or not.

The plan was that a demonstration (in real time history) of the Creator's love for His subjects would draw from many a response of love, leading to transformation of their lives - and their individual rescue... a total reconciliation with their Maker and the eventual restoration of all that was lost.

Archaeology shows, from the preserved records, that ancient races handed down this promise. They were expecting this promised Deliverer. (For evidence of this see my books, *The Sting of the Scorpion* and *Ark of the Covenant*.)

And the Promised One came. He entered history at the predicted time and place. He lived among us, and died for our sins.

And soon He is returning to interrupt history, end man's rule under Lucifer, and wipe out death, pain and evil, and create a brand new world for those whose hearts are in harmony with Him.

Remember, the hijacker had charged that God was a tyrant who did not care about His subjects, and that he, Satan, could set up a better government.

Such an accusation could be answered only if the rebel were given time to show his true colors. And when the watching universe saw the centuries of hatred, heartache and death on planet earth, they began to understand.

And when they saw God come to the rescue of helpless man, and saw Satan instigate the crucifixion, the most shameful and agonizing of deaths, upon his Creator, and God willing to go through the suffering for us, ***there was no longer any doubt as***

***to WHO IS RESPONSIBLE for this planet's tears - and who it is who really cares.***

This God-man suffered all our temptations, and carried all our griefs. We have nothing to bear that He has not endured.

Do you get that? He understands the full force of all suffering, pain and disappointment that are thrust upon us. Indeed, suffering was more keenly felt by Jesus, for He was free from the taint of sin.

The self-sacrifice of the Son of God furnishes the answer to whether He cares. Yes, you can be sure that He cares passionately about you, that He will listen to you and is able to intervene for your good.

But His rescue plan is for all - but each individual remains free to accept or reject it. *He will compel nobody.*

### **How to receive this exciting offer**

And this is its practical value to YOU. He now offers each of us RESCUE - freedom from guilt, worry and fear. PARDON for everything - yes, everything in our past - and a clean new sheet. IF WE WILL JUST ACCEPT HIM as our Rescuer.

- \* Admit your need of such a Rescuer.
- \* Confess your wrongs to Him, in heart-felt sincerity.
- \* Hand over your will to Him, so He can help you.

Then His Spirit will come flooding into your life, bringing POWER to overcome your bad ways, POWER to endure suffering, and total PEACE and HAPPINESS, no matter what happens to you in this life.

What unimaginable love!

# 14

## COUNTER ATTACK

If the message of Jesus is true, then it must be the most wonderful news that you or I could ever receive.

Yet the widespread hostility against it seems to be almost an obsession. Who is orchestrating this hostility?

Ask yourself, *who has the most to lose?* That's right, the Legion of Lucifer have the biggest motive in the world... REVENGE!

### Satan the real god of the Mysteries

And those various pagan 'Mystery' religions with their imitation messiahs: Why were they set up? To divert mankind away from the rescue plan, no less. And to bring them under Lucifer's control. (Alexander Hislop, *The Two Babylons*; London: S.W. Partridge & Co., 1969, Jonathan Gray, *Stolen Identity*, chapters 12 to 16 – <<http://www.beforeus.com/stolen-id.php>>)

At the time the real Messiah put in his appearance, mighty Rome ruled the world. Rome was already a prisoner to that 'Mystery' religion – which meant Lucifer was the secret god of Rome.

Throughout history, *Lucifer's emblems* were the *serpent* and the *sun*. That's what the name Lucifer means – Day-star. And, according to the fundamental doctrine of the Mysteries, as brought from Babylon to Pergamos, thence to Rome, the *sun* was *the one only god*. (Macrobius, *Saturnalia*, lib. I. cap. 17,23, pp. 65, C, and 72, 1, 2)

Thus Teitan, or *Satan*, had become the one only god. And Janus was just an incarnation of this same only god. *Now the secret is*

*out... the real name* of the supreme great god of Rome. Worship of Satan (Lucifer) was the secret purpose of the Mysteries.

This secret was most jealously guarded. So much so, that when one of the most learned of the Romans, the high-ranking Valerius Soranus, incautiously divulged it, he was mercifully put to death. (Hislop, *The Two Babylons*. p. 279)

Eventually *Satan* was regarded with awe and dread under the name of *Pluto*, the god of the underworld, as the great god on whom every person's destiny depended. To him it belonged 'to purify souls after death.' (Taylor's *Pausanias*, vol. iii. P.321, Note)

And his other symbol, the *serpent*, was worshipped in all the earth with extraordinary reverence! Therefore, to claim that one had been born as 'the serpent's seed' potentially attracted great honor to the claimant. That's why Olympias, the mother of Alexander the Great, declared that her son had not sprung from King Phillip, her husband, but from Jupiter, in the form of a *serpent*! And why the Roman emperor Augustus pretended that he had issued from Apollo in the form of a *serpent*.

## **Strategy 1: destroy Christianity from outside**

The bottom line was this: Rome ruled the world. And Lucifer was the unseen ruler of Rome.

Well aware were the Legion of Lucifer that if the news of Jesus being the true and only Deliverer should triumph, then the pagan altars and temples of Rome would disappear.

So the Legion of Lucifer, through their Roman puppets, declared full scale war... open season on the followers of Jesus. Police were searching for these 'traitors' everywhere.

But the fiercer the attacks, the bolder the Christians became. Their love of Jesus meant more to them than their own lives. As

thousands were imprisoned and executed, more sprang up to take their places. Instead of liquidating Christianity, persecution made it explode. And paganism began to fall back on its heels.

## **Strategy 2: sabotage it from within**

Lucifer and Co. figured they had better put an end to this crisis once and for all. They decided to change tactics – infiltrate the movement and destroy it from within with a phony system of Christianity. Smart and sneaky, it would work like a charm.

The local Christian church in Rome, the capital city of the empire, became the target. By stealth, infiltrators got themselves planted in positions of influence within the group. Then they gradually sneaked in their pagan gods and idols – outwardly giving them new names... so that to the ordinary people the pagan Jupiter was “just a memorial to the Christian apostle Peter.” Venus became the Virgin Mary. The sun god’s December 25 ‘birthday’ became the birthday of Jesus, and so on.

The unsuspecting members had no idea that their new leaders were pagans who worshipped these images in honor of Lucifer. The Christian movement in Rome had been taken over. And this subterfuge is documented by numerous historians.

Today’s religious Roman top leadership knows their allegiance is to the same Lucifer cult as ancient Rome. As I write, when priests advance to the *highest* levels of initiation, they are taught that their leader is not Jesus, but Lucifer.

Of all systems on earth today, Roman Catholicism is the ancient **Babylonian system in its purest form** – in at least 80 of its features. (Hislop, *The Two Babylons*, 330 pages) Despite this, the hierarchy allows the *ordinary* members and priests worldwide – millions of genuine, loving people – to think their organization

is set up for “Mary” and “Jesus”, *so as to maintain their support*. Sad, but true. These poor people are unwitting victims of a takeover.

## **A continuation of the Roman Empire**

So it was that, as the Roman Empire disintegrated in the 5<sup>th</sup> century, Lucifer’s paganised church in Rome stepped into its place. Papal Rome was, for all practical purposes, the continuation of the Roman Empire. Listen to the historians:

*"Out of the ruins of political Rome, arose the great moral Empire in the 'giant form' of the Roman Church."* (A.C. Flick, *The Rise of the Mediaeval Church*. 1900, p. 150)

*"The mighty Catholic Church was little more than the Roman Empire baptised. Rome was transformed as well as converted. The very capital of the old Empire became the capital of the Christian Empire. The office of the Pontifex Maximus was continued in that of the Pope. . . . Even the Roman language has remained the official language of the Roman Catholic Church down through the ages."* (Clarence Flick, *The Rise of the Mediaeval Church*, New York: Burt Franklin, 1959 pp. 148, 149).

*"The Roman Church...privily pushed itself into the place of the Roman World Empire, of which it is the actual continuation; the empire has not perished, but has only undergone a transformation.... It still governs the nations.... It is a political creation, and as imposing as a World-Empire, because the continuation of the Roman Empire. The Pope, who calls himself "King" and "Pontifex Maximus," is Caesar's successor."* (Adolf Harnack, *What is Christianity?* New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1903, pp. 269,270 – italics in the original)

Papal Rome agrees:

Henry Cardinal Manning: *“The possession of the pontiffs [popes], commences with the abandonment of Rome by the emperors.”*

Once it was established with armies at its disposal, the church in the capital city then set out to eliminate all opposition within the Christian world to the imitation Christianity it had set up.

### **The faithful retreat into wilderness regions**

Real Bible Christians everywhere were appalled. They knew Lucifer had taken over the church in Rome and that although called Christian, it was phony, satanic and totally unchristian. So to save their families, millions of true believers withdrew to secluded areas where they could continue their uncorrupted way of life. Pure Christianity went underground for about 1,000 years.

Meanwhile, the political-religious power became the visible, ruling body over kings and nations. During those centuries it would slaughter 50 to 120 million true believers. And where Bibles were found, they were burned by order of the church of Rome. (John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, 432 pages) This history, once available in our libraries, is being book by book checked out and “lost”.

For those who are not familiar with the prophecies of the Bible prophet Daniel, there follows a quick summary. This will lay out the setting for everything that follows. So, are you ready? Here goes...

# 15

## DANIEL'S FOUR AMAZING PROPHECIES

In the 6th century BC the prophet Daniel was given a preview of certain events of world history that would affect those who choose to follow God's way. Some of these events were later enlarged upon in the prophetic book of Revelation.

The two books of Daniel and Revelation are twins. The prophecies of Daniel lay the foundation for understanding the book of Revelation.

The book of Daniel, contains four parallel prophecies:

1. Daniel chapter 2
2. Daniel chapter 7
3. Daniel 8-9
4. Daniel 11-12

Each successive prophecy elaborates on the previous one, adding more detail. An understanding of this **pattern** is essential if we wish to understand Revelation correctly. (See the chart in Chapter 22.)

# 16

## THE DANIEL 2 PROPHECY

Around 586 BC, God allowed Daniel to pull back the curtain of time and look far ahead into the future history of the world.

He was shown a great statue with a:

- head of gold
- breast and arms of silver
- belly and thighs of brass and
- legs of iron
- feet and toes a mixture of iron and clay.
- Then a rock ‘cut out without human hands’ hit the statue's feet and ground it to powder. Then this rock grew larger and larger until it covered the whole earth. And it stood forever.

Daniel, informed by God, told the king of ancient Babylon:  
*“You are that head of gold.”* (Daniel 2:28)

### ***BABYLON***

Actually, Daniel was saying, “The **head of gold represents Babylon**, your kingdom, King Nebuchadnezzar.” For he continued: *“After you, another kingdom will rise, inferior to yours.”* (v.39)

### ***MEDO-PERSIA***

This **second kingdom was to be Medo-Persia**. It conquered Babylon in 538 BC. This power, represented by the arms and **chest of silver** was indeed inferior to the golden empire of Babylon, just as silver is inferior to gold.

## **GRECIA**

*“Next, a third kingdom, one of bronze, will rule over the whole earth.”* (v.39) Two hundred years later, Alexander the Great, with his infantry, described by historians as **Greek** pirates “of **bronze**” coming from the sea, crushed the Medo-Persian Empire in 331 BC.

## **ROME**

But this Grecian Empire, symbolized by the belly and thighs of brass would also pass from the scene of history, for God predicted a **fourth kingdom**, *“strong as iron.”* (v.40) And just as predicted, the **Roman** armies defeated the armies of the Grecian Empire in 168 BC.

## **ROMAN EMPIRE DIVIDED**

*“And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided.”* (v.41)

## **KINGDOM OF GOD**

Then the prophecy comes to an astounding climax:

Daniel 2:44 - *“And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.”*

## **TO SUMMARISE**

The prophecy of Daniel chapter 2 stated that, beginning with Babylon, there would be just four great empires in succession.

History shows that these were Babylon, Medo-Persia, Grecia, then Rome.

The fourth empire (Rome) would **not** be conquered by a fifth power, but would break up, be divided.

The nations that emerged from the break-up of the Roman empire would remain, some strong, the others weak.

However, the iron (representing Rome) would continue to the end. (How this would be is explained in the subsequent prophecies given to Daniel.)

Finally, the God of heaven will take over, bringing an end to the warring nations, and His kingdom will last forever.



# 17

## THE DANIEL 7 PROPHECY

In this prophecy, instead of four metals, there are **four wild beasts** rising out of the troubled sea.

- The **first was like a lion** and had eagle's wings.
- The **second was like a lopsided bear**, and it had three ribs in its mouth between its teeth
- The **third was like a leopard**, with four wings and also four heads “and dominion was given to it.”
- The **fourth beast, dreadful and terrible**, and strong exceedingly; had great iron teeth; “and it had ten horns.”

Daniel seemed to be especially intrigued by the **ten horns** of this savage looking animal and while he was thinking about the ten horns, he was amazed to notice another little horn pushing its way up among the ten.

*Daniel 7:8 - “I considered the horns, and behold, **there came up among them another little horn**, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.”*

*Daniel 7:16,17 - “The four great beasts are **four kingdoms that will arise.**”*

We use the same type of symbolism today. When we see a bear and a kangaroo in an editorial cartoon, we immediately recognize that they represent Russia and Australia. God used the same method of depicting certain nations long before man did.

But, you say, "What significance did **the churning, restless ocean** - and the four **winds** have in Daniel's dream?"

Prophetic symbols are used consistently throughout the Scriptures. In Revelation we read:

Revelation 17:15 - "*The **waters** which thou sawest...are **peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.***"

In other words, these four kingdoms, symbolized by four beasts, were to rise to power out of the populated areas of the world.

**The winds** upon the sea fitly represents the strife and commotion coming from all directions that usually accompanies the rise and fall of earthly kingdoms.

Jeremiah 49:36-37 - "*And upon Elam will I bring the four **winds**... to be dismayed before **their enemies**... I will send **the sword** after them.*"

Do you recognise **the parallel of the four metals in the Daniel 2 statue with the four beasts** of this chapter 7 prophecy?

### ***FIRST BEAST - BABYLON***

Could anything better symbolize **Babylon**, the first great empire represented by the head of gold in the towering statue, than a lion - king of beasts?

The symbolism of the **lion** with eagle's wings was so appropriate, for that was one of the symbols used by the ancient Babylonian Empire. It is interesting to note that visitors to the excavated ruins of Babylon today can see **lion-shaped base-reliefs** on baked-brick walls and monuments, **often pictured with eagle's wings!**

The rapidity with which Babylon gained power and spread its empire is appropriately symbolized by the eagle's wings.

In the book of Jeremiah, God predicted that the Babylonian armies would invade ancient Israel and destroy her cities. Notice that God uses the same symbol of a lion to represent Babylon:

Jeremiah 4:7 - "*A **lion** has come out of his lair; a destroyer of nations has set out. He has left his place to lay waste your land.*"

However, God said the wings of the lion would be plucked and a man's heart would be given it. In other words, God was saying that Babylon would become so weak that it would no longer have the courage and boldness of one possessing a "lion's heart". And that's exactly what happened!

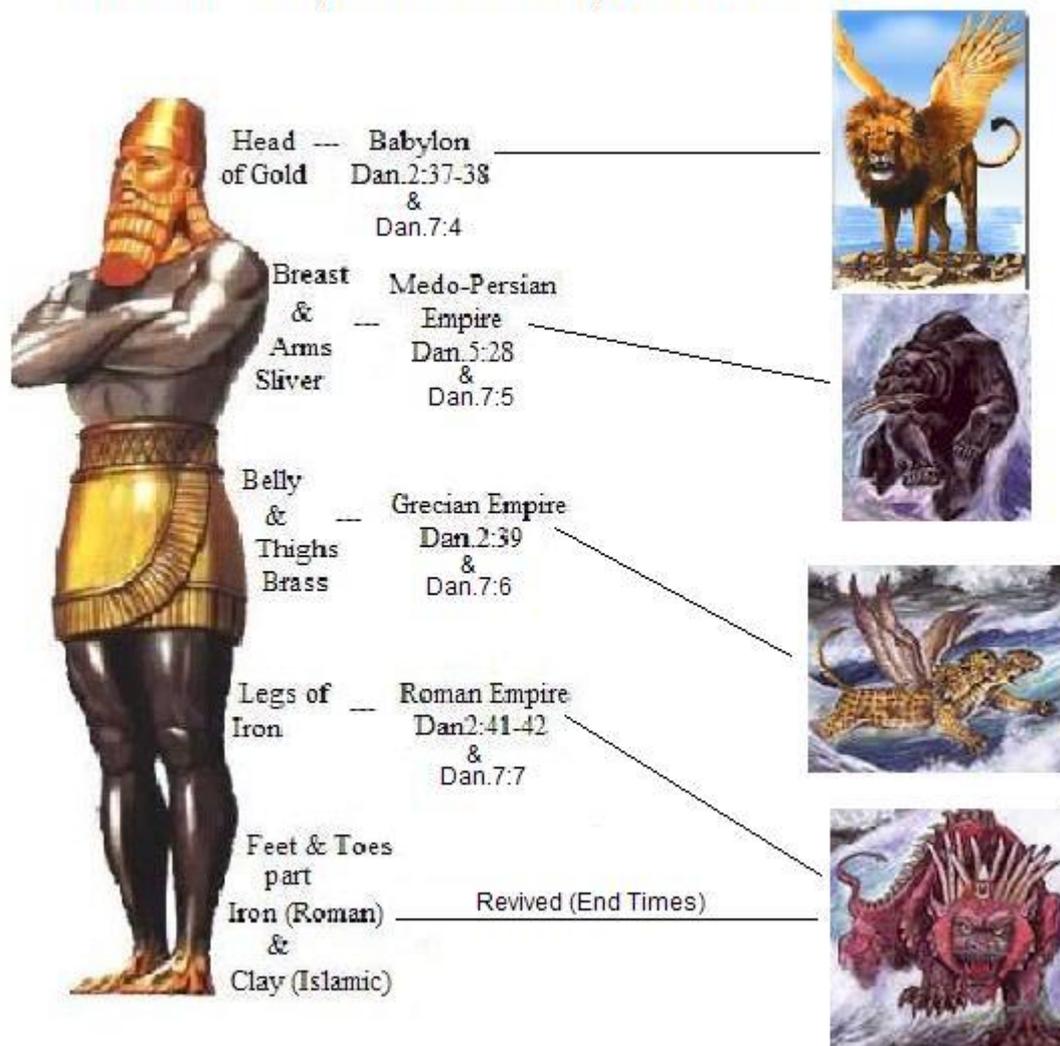
On the night when the Medo-Persians attacked Babylon, the king of Babylon's "*face turned pale and he was so frightened that his knees knocked together and his legs gave way.*" (Daniel 5:5,6)

Truly, the "heart of a lion" was replaced by that of a man. The prophet Jeremiah wrote concerning the soldiers of Babylon:

Jeremiah 51:30 - "*Babylon's warriors have stopped fighting; they remain in their strongholds. Their strength is exhausted; they have become like women.*"

That night, October 13, 538 BC, the Babylonian kingdom, represented by the head of gold in the metal image, and by the lion with eagle's wings in Daniel's prophecy, came to an inglorious end.

The Image of the Beast is the same as the Four Great Beast rising out of the Great Sea (Mediterranean Sea). Daniel 2:31-45 & Daniel 7



Ten Toes are the Ten Horns

### ***MEDO-PERSIA***

The kingdom or empire represented by the second beast (the **bear**) can be none other than the conquering nation of **Media-Persia**, the same kingdom represented by the arms and chest of silver in the giant statue.

Daniel 7:5 - *“And it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it.”*

This second empire was a dual dynasty or a coalition government: the Medes and the Persians were united into one empire. However, before long, the **Persians** were the **dominant** power in the dynasty. In other words, one side of this coalition was more powerful than the other. God had seen this shift in power and predicted it years before it took place.

It is generally understood that the three ribs in its mouth represent Lydia, Babylon and Egypt, the three principal territories gobbled up by the Medo-Persian armies.

## **GRECIA**

There followed “*another, like a **leopard**, which had upon the back of it four **wings** of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.*” (Daniel 7:6)

Comparing this prophecy with its companion prophecy of Daniel chapter 8, we are told that it would be the Grecian empire that would replace Medo-Persia, and that this would occur under Grecia's first king. (Daniel 8:20,21)

Daniel died about 200 years before **Alexander** appeared on the world scene, and when Alexander arrived in Jerusalem, the priests showed him the book of Daniel and its statements about a Greek ruler who would conquer the Persians, and he saw himself as the person intended. (Josephus, *Antiquities of the Jews*, Book 11, ch.8)

Just as a slow-moving bear proves no match for the agile leopard, so the Persian armies were unable to defend themselves against the swift advances of Alexander the Great.

The four wings appropriately picture the great rapidity of Alexander's conquests. He defeated Darius III of Persia in the battle of Arbela in 331 BC. In less than ten years Alexander had become the ruler of the most extensive empire the world had

ever known.

But what about those **four heads** of the leopard?

Daniel 8:22 - "*Four kingdoms shall stand up out of the nation.*"

Did the Grecian Empire become divided into four lesser divisions?

Indeed it did. After Alexander's death and a bloody power struggle, finally four of Alexander's generals gained control of the empire, which split into four kingdoms – those of Cassander, Lysimachus, Ptolemy and Seleucus and their successors.

### ***ROMAN EMPIRE***

The fourth kingdom shall be "*exceedingly strong,*" with enormous iron teeth to destroy its prey. Here is pictured a cruel, vicious power. A more fitting description of the rise of the Roman Empire could not be found. It was more ruthless and brutal than all the previous empires, sometimes annihilating whole cities. When it didn't destroy or subjugate a people, it used them as slaves or sold them into slavery.

It is interesting to notice that in Daniel's description of this monstrous beast he said it had "*iron teeth*". In the metal image prophecy of Daniel chapter 2, the same *fourth* kingdom was represented by *iron legs*.

### ***ROME DIVIDED***

Daniel 7:24 - "*The ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise.*"

No doubt Daniel's eye flashed back to the great metal image with the **ten toes**. These ten horns of the monstrous beast and the ten toes of the metal image represent ten smaller kingdoms that would result in the break-up of the Roman empire.

The empire of Rome ruled for 600 years before it disintegrated. During the 4th Century A.D., barbaric tribes from the north swept down over the Roman Empire. And by 476 AD, Rome had been **divided into ten segments**, just as the Bible predicted.

The kingdoms that emerged with the break-up of the Roman Empire are modern nations of Europe today:

- |                |  |
|----------------|--|
| 1. ALAMANNI    | - GERMANS  |
| 2. FRANKS      | - FRENCH   |
| 3. SAXONS      | - ENGLISH  |
| 4. VISIGOTHS   | - SPANISH  |
| 5. BERGUNDIANS | - SWISS  |
| 6. LOMBARDS    | - ITALIANS                                       |
| 7. SEUVI       | - PORTUGUESE                                     |
| 8, 9, and 10:  | (HERULI, VANDALS and<br>OSTROGOTHS, now extinct) |

As you see, seven of these kingdoms or nations are still in Europe today.

### ***A LITTLE KINGDOM ARISES***

But the thing that interested Daniel most was the “*little horn*” that pushed itself up among the ten horns, uprooting three horns, or powers, in its struggle for ascendancy.

Daniel 7:8 - “*Behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots.*”

Daniel noticed something else about this “little horn”:

*Daniel 7:8 - “And, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.”*

This part of the description of the little horn troubled Daniel. In fact, he wrote: *“I Daniel was grieved in my spirit ... and the visions of my head troubled me.”* (v.15)

**QUESTION:** Why would this part of the prophecy about the little horn cause him such concern?

**ANSWER:** Daniel explains:

*Daniel 7:21,25 - “I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;... And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.”*

Daniel recognized that this prophecy was no longer just a prediction of secular history in advance. It had to do with God's people, because this "little horn" power would make war against the people of God, and would actually prevail against them for a period of time. It would be a hostile, persecuting power. A power, or agency used by Satan to make war against God, His people and His truth.

### ***ID POINTS***

1. It will arise after the break-up of the Roman Empire – AFTER the other ten kingdoms.
2. It will arise among them (i.e. it is a European power).
3. It will uproot (eliminate) three of them.
4. It will be different from other kingdoms.

5. It will speak great words against (in place of) God.
6. It will wage persecution and war against the people of God.
7. It will “think to change” the times and laws of God.
8. It will prevail over the nations for 1260 years.
9. It will be revived and continue its work until the return of Jesus Christ.
10. It will be destroyed at the second coming.

Remember, when the Roman Empire collapsed, **ten divisions** resulted. Barbarian tribes hammered at the Roman Empire for many years until it fell apart and the ten divisions were ruled by ten kings!

When the “little horn” power emerged, **three nations resisted it**. These three, the Vandals, Ostrogoths and Heruli, were destroyed by the Papacy of Rome. Finally, the armies of Emperor Justinian, in cooperation with the Pope, thrust the Ostrogoths out of the city of Rome. They have become extinct.

In 538 AD the Pope took possession of the city after the Emperor decreed that he should be the head of all the Christian churches. Thus began the **1260 year political reign** of the Papacy, until 1798 when Napoleon’s general Berthier abolished the political power of the Vatican and the Papacy was declared to be “extinct”.

### ***THE JUDGMENT***

Prophecy reveals that the power of the "fourth beast" and the "horns" will continue until the end of time.

Then Daniel saw a most remarkable sight:

Daniel 7:10 - *“The judgment was set, and the books were opened.”*

Daniel was shown the judgment scene in which the Father, or Ancient of Days, sits in judgment of the world and the "little horn" power that made war against the saints. Daniel foretells the outcome:

*Daniel 7:26 - "But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it [the 'little horn'] unto the end."*

In other words, God is saying **He will reverse the situation:**

*Daniel 7:18 - "The saints of the most High [who have been persecuted by the 'little horn' power] shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever."*

# 18

## THE DANIEL 8 PROPHECY

Since Daniel received this prophecy just a few years before Babylon was overthrown, this vision begins with the empire which was to succeed it, namely Medo-Persia. He reports:

### THE PROPHECY:

"In the third year of the reign of king Belshazzar a vision appeared unto me, even unto me Daniel...

I lifted up mine eyes, and saw, and, behold, there stood before the river **a ram** which had two horns (the kings of **Media and Persia** v20): and the two horns were high; but one was higher than the other, and the higher came up last. Daniel 8:1,3

Subsequent history reveals that of the two parts of the Medo-Persian empire, the Persians, who became dominant over the Medes, were the younger of the two nations.

I saw the ram pushing westward, and northward, and southward; so that no beasts might stand before him, neither was there any that could deliver out of his hand; but he did according to his will, and **became great.** v.4

After combining into one unit, they expanded their territory in precisely the order foretold in this prophecy.

And as I was considering, behold, an he **goat** came from the west on the face of the whole earth, and touched not the ground: and the goat had a notable horn between his eyes.

The rough goat is the king of **Grecia**: and the great horn that is between his eyes is **the first king**.

And he came to the ram that had two horns, which I had seen standing before the river, and ran unto him in the fury of his power.

And I saw him come close unto the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and **smote the ram**, and brake his two horns: and there was no power in the ram to stand before him, but he cast him down to the ground, and stamped upon him: and there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand. vv.5,21,6-7

The prophecy foretells that Grecia, represented by a goat coming from the west, would, under its first king (Alexander the Great) defeat and replace Medo-Persia.

Therefore **the he goat** waxed **very great**: and when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven.

Now that being **broken**, whereas four stood up for it, **four kingdoms** shall stand up out of the nation, but not in his power. vv.8,22

As predicted, Alexander died at the height of his power. Since he left no heir, his generals fought each other until there were only four left, and they divided the empire into *four sections* - the kingdoms of Cassander, Lysimachus, Seleucus, and Ptolemy.

And **out of one of them** came forth a **little horn**, which **waxed exceeding great**, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant land. v.9

**“OUT OF ONE OF THEM came forth a little horn”** (Daniel 8:9)

“*Out of one of them*” (verse 9) refers back to the phrase “*the four winds of heaven*” which precedes it (verse 8). In other words, the little horn was to arise out of one of those four directions (north, south, east and west) of the divided Grecian empire.

The “little horn” was another power that was to come out of “the four winds” occupied by the four horns – while the four were still in existence. Rome fulfils this specification.

**“Waxed EXCEEDING GREAT”** (Daniel 8:9)

The ram (Medo Persia) became “GREAT” (Dan.8:4)

The goat (Grecia) waxed “VERY GREAT” (v.8)

But the little horn waxed “EXCEEDING great” (v.9)

Only Rome was greater than the two empires preceding it. Compare this “*EXCEEDING great*” of Daniel 8:9 with the description in Daniel 7:7 of the same Roman empire – “*strong EXCEEDINGLY*”. This link ties them together as **the same power**.

**“... waxed exceeding great toward the SOUTH, and toward the EAST, and toward the PLEASANT LAND” (Daniel 8:9)**

Rome “WAXED EXCEEDING GREAT” in these same places in the EXACT ORDER prophesied by Daniel.

- \* First, in 168 BC Rome took control of Egypt in the SOUTH, when she ousted Antiochus Epiphanes.
  - \* Much later, in 66 BC Pompey made Syria in the EAST a Roman province.
  - \* Then the next year, 65 BC, he marched into Judea (the “PLEASANT LAND”) and took Jerusalem.
- all in the precisely correct order** as outlined in the prophecy.

We know from Daniel 2 and 7 and from history that the power which followed the divided empire of Greece was Rome. In chapters 2 and 7 it was shown in two phases: Pagan Rome and Divided Rome. We saw in Daniel chapter 7 that the religious power of Papal Rome rose to dominate the divided Roman empire.

**And it waxed great, even to the host of heaven. v.10**

You will notice that, at first, the Roman empire expanded **horizontally** across the earth...toward the south and east and Judaea. But then it entered a new phase, expanding its ambitions **vertically upward - "even to the host of heaven"** In other words, it became openly religious... transforming itself into the Papal Roman organisation, the Vatican.

...and it cast down some of the host [of heaven] and of the stars [angels of heaven] to the ground, and stamped upon them. v.10

Notice the claims made by this organisation:

*"... **the pope** is of so great dignity and so exalted that he is **not a mere man, but as it were God**, and the vicar of God... He is likewise the divine monarch and supreme emperor, king of kings ... moreover the superiority and the power of the Roman Pontiff by no means pertain only to heavenly things, to earthly things, and to things under the earth, but are **even over angels, than whom he is greater....** so that if it were possible that the angels might err in the faith, or might think contrary to the faith, they **could be judged and excommunicated by the pope.**" (Lucius Ferraris, Prompta Bibliotheca, art. "Papa" II. Vol.VI, pp.26-29 - which the Catholic Encyclopedia refers to as "a veritable encyclopedia of religious knowledge" and "a precious mine of information.")*

Yea, he **magnified himself** even to the prince of the host [Jesus], and by him the daily was taken away, and **the place of the sanctuary was cast down.**

And an host was given him against the daily sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it **cast down the truth to the ground**; and it practised, and prospered. vv.11-12

Can the Papacy physically cast angels down? Can it literally take away the place of God's sanctuary in heaven? It can't.

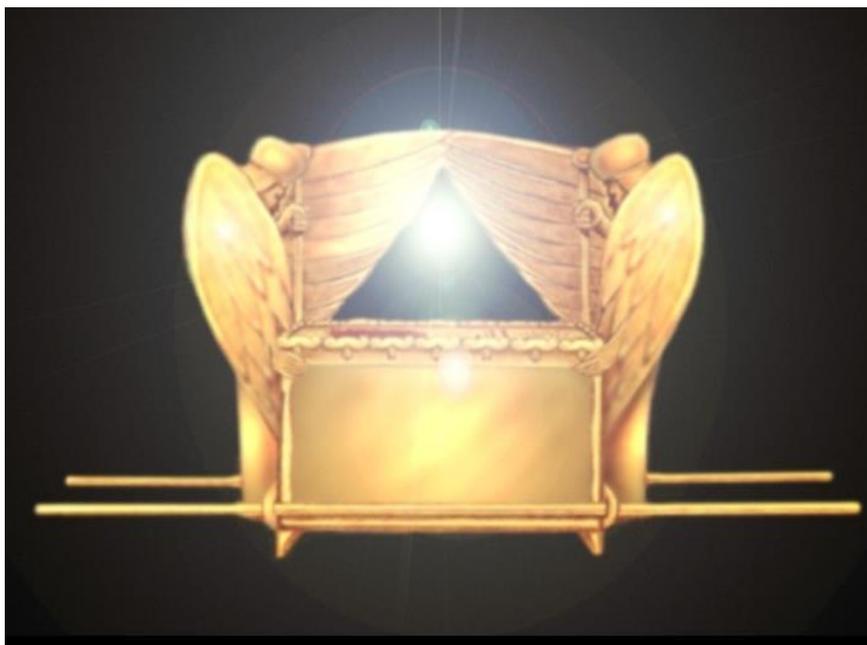
It cannot literally, physically, cast them down, any more than it could physically cast down the truth. But, through papal claims and prerogatives, claiming superiority over the angels, by such claims it "**waxes great**", even to the host of heaven, and figuratively casts them down. And by claiming that you confess your sins not to Jesus in the sanctuary of heaven but to priests on earth, **the place of God's sanctuary is cast down.** Jesus' "daily" or continual ministry in heaven, based upon His all-

sufficient sacrifice on earth, is cast down. It is an attack on the truth. A counterfeit earthly sanctuary replaces the true.

The Old Testament sanctuary (Temple) and its priestly services were a prophetic teaching symbol of the true sanctuary in heaven, where Jesus, since His ascension, has been ministering as our High Priest and intercessor, representing us before God. (See chapter 28) After His sacrifice on earth, Jesus returned to heaven to represent all believers before God. (See chapter 28 of this present work.) There Jesus pleads the merits of His death on our behalf. (Hebrews chapters 8 and 9)

This prophecy we are now examining in Daniel chapter 8 exposes the papacy as the great counterfeiter, which was predicted to arise and "*cast down" the place of [Christ's] sanctuary*" (Temple) to the earth. (Daniel 8:11-12)

And how? The Old Testament sanctuary foreshadowed Jesus' heavenly ministry. But Rome has cast it down, so that instead of going in prayer direct to God through Jesus our High Priest in the heavenly sanctuary, you are told to *confess your sins to a man on earth*. Again, in the Old Testament sanctuary was the Ark of the Covenant, portraying God in heaven on a throne with an attending golden cherub on each side.



Today, in the Vatican, the pope sits on his throne, with the statue of a golden cherub on each side of him!

In the photograph below, Pope Francis leads the celebration of the Vespers of the Solemnity of the Conversion of Saint Paul, Jan. 25, 2014, concluding the Week of Prayer for Christian Unity, at the Basilica of St. Paul's Outside the Walls (*San Paolo fuori le mura*). Note that Pope Francis was seated on a great white throne (imitating God's throne - Revelation 20:11) between two golden Cherubim (Isaiah 37:16) in the apse.



*Screen capture from Vatican TV*



I ask you, who but the Antichrist would dare enthrone himself between two golden Cherubim, as if he were seated on the mercy seat of the ark, in the place of the glory of God, showing himself that he is God?

Isaiah 37:16 clearly states: "O LORD of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest between the cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth."

But the apostle Paul predicted that after the fall of the Roman Empire, a blasphemous power would arise within which a man would sit claiming to be God, and which would continue until the Second Coming of Jesus Christ. But this man had to wait for the Roman Empire to vacate its seat, before he could take over. Early Christians knew Daniel's prophecies which spoke of this. Paul prophesied:

“...that man of sin [shall] be revealed, the son of perdition; Who exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that ***he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.***” (2 Thessalonians 2: 3,4)

Interestingly, in 1846, the Roman Catholic newspaper *The Universe* (June 27) gave this official description of the ceremony of the installation of the Pope:

He is borne in the pontifical chair and is placed on the High Altar, a spot consecrated by the actual presence of the body, blood, soul and divinity of a living Christ. He sits on the High Altar, using it as his footstool, and enthroned as King, he is adored as a God in the same manner as is the consecrated wafer, adored by the Cardinal Princes, who kiss his feet which rest on the altar of the supreme. ***He sits in the temple of God, showing himself as if he were God.*** (*The Universe* [Roman Catholic], June 27, 1846)

***Bible prophecy:***

**...he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.** (2 Thess. 2:4)

***Fulfilment:***

**“He sits in the temple of God, showing himself as if he were God.”** (*The Catholic Universe*)

Can you imagine a more blatant and unashamed acknowledgement of a prophecy fulfilled?

Bible prophecy has an uncanny knack of using the right words! You may wonder, Why would Rome so unashamedly boast about fulfilling the prophecy of 2 Thessalonians? It appears that the top leadership are arrogant enough to reveal such things because they know they have world power within their reach and believe there is nothing we can do about it.

And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes. v.25

History records the craftiness of the Vatican time after time, in declaring peace with its intended victims, so as to take them off guard, then unexpectedly attacking and slaughtering them.

Rome stood up against the "Prince of the host," the "Prince of princes" (Daniel 8:11, 25), who is none other than Jesus Christ. Against Him and His people, as well as His heavenly sanctuary, the power of Rome fought an astonishing, crafty warfare.

This description covers both the pagan and papal phases of Rome. While pagan Rome withstood Christ and did indeed destroy the Temple in Jerusalem, papal Rome effectively obscured the priestly, mediation ministry of Christ in behalf of

sinners in the heavenly sanctuary (see Hebrews 8:1, 2) by substituting a priesthood on earth that pretends instead to offer forgiveness through the mediation of men.

In this new capacity, it was to become successful, for it "**cast down the truth to the ground**" and "**shall prosper.**" (Daniel 8:12,24)

And his power shall be mighty, but **not by his own power:** and he shall... **destroy the mighty and the holy people.** v.24

The Papacy did not have its own army, but employed the military power of the nations it conquered to do its work. The prophecy predicts that this power, Papal Rome, will persecute those who stand for the truth. Historians vary in their figures, but the record of the Dark Ages when the Vatican reigned supreme is that she murdered between 50 million and 120 million people for their faith.

By a quick comparison of the "fourth Beast" and its "little horn" from chapter 7 with the "little horn" of chapter 8, we see that they are one and the same power:

Daniel 7:

- "make war with the saints" (v.21)
- "mouth speaking great things" (vv.8,25)
- "exceeding dreadful" (v.19)
- "beast was slain... given to the burning" (v.11)

Daniel 8:

- "destroy the mighty and the holy people" (v.24)
- "magnified himself" (v.11)
- "of fierce countenance" (v.23)
- "broken without hand" (v.25)

This power, represented here in Daniel 8 as a blending of Pagan and Papal Rome, has throughout the course of its history fulfilled the prophecies in this chapter.

But he shall be broken without hand.  
v.25

Now the assurance is given that ultimately this haughty, blasphemous and persecuting power will be "broken **without hand**." This expression alludes to the "image" prophecy of Daniel chapter 2, which predicts that from the sky will come the "rock cut out **without hands**" that will strike the feet of the "image" and smash it to pieces. This will occur at the predicted return of Jesus "the Rock" who will bring an end to man's corrupt rulership and establish His own everlasting kingdom.

Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint which spake, **How long** shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, **to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot?**

And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the **sanctuary be cleansed**.

vv.13-14

In this prophecy, the hosts of heaven are concerned. One asks, "**how long** shall" this evil continue before God steps in?

Then comes the answer: "Unto 2,300 days, then shall the sanctuary be cleansed." (Daniel 8:13,14)

A day in Bible prophecy equals one literal year (Ezekiel 4:6; Numbers 14:34), so the 2,300 days allotted for the events in this

vision are 2,300 years. This time period cannot be 2,300 literal days—a little over 6 years—because this vision encompasses the Persian, Grecian, Roman, and Papal powers, and because verses 17 and 19 state that the vision extends **to the end of time**.

Daniel 8:17,19 - *“At the TIME OF THE END shall be the vision... in the LAST END of the indignation.”*

This little horn prophecy extends to the end times – to our day. The angel Gabriel is given a divine command to instruct Daniel so he will “understand the vision.” (verses 15-22) However, Daniel faints before Gabriel can give him the starting date of the 2300 days/years. Daniel later states that no one understood the vision, v. 27.

The angel explained all parts of the vision except the 2300 days and the cleansing of the sanctuary. Where the interpretation for these parts of the vision would be expected, Daniel was instead told to close up the vision. (verses 26-27)

The angel does not give the starting date in this chapter 8 of Daniel but we know that is sometime during the reign of Medo-Persia (538-331 BC), which was the first kingdom in this prophecy. The exact starting date will be given in the next chapter of Daniel, which we shall now investigate...

---

FOOTNOTE: Some consider Antiochus Epiphanes, a Syrian King who ruled over Palestine for a short period in the second century BC, the fulfillment of this part of the prophecy. Others, including many of the Reformers, have identified this little horn as Rome in both its pagan and papal phases. This last interpretation fits exactly the specifications Daniel gave, whereas the other does not. Notice the following points:

- a. The little horn power **extends** from the fall of the Greek empire **till the "'time of the end'"** (Dan. 8:17). Only Rome, pagan and papal, meets these time specifications.
- b. The prophecies of Daniel 2, 7, and 8 **parallel each other** (see the **prophetic parallel chart** in Chapter 22 of this present book). The four metals of the image of Daniel 2 and the four beasts of Daniel 7 represent the same world empires: Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome. Both the feet of iron and clay and the ten horns of the fourth beast represent the divisions of Rome; those divided states were to continue

to exist until the Second Advent. Note that both prophecies point to Rome as the successor of Greece and as the last empire before the Second Advent and final judgment. The little horn in Daniel 8 fits in the same slot; it follows Greece and is supernaturally destroyed or "broken without human hand" (Dan. 8:25; cf. Dan. 2:34).

c. Medo-Persia is called "great," Greece is described as being "very great," and the little horn as "exceedingly great" (Dan. 8:4, 8, 9). Rome, one of the greatest world empires, fits this specification.

d. Only Rome expanded its empire to the south (Egypt), the east (Macedonia and Asia Minor), and "the Glorious Land" (Palestine), as the prophecy predicted (Dan. 8:9).

e. Rome stood up against the "Prince of the host," the "Prince of princes" (Dan. 8:11, 25), who is none other than Jesus Christ.

---

# 19

## WHEN DO THE 2,300 DAYS BEGIN?

After Daniel's vision of chapter 8, the angel Gabriel was bidden, *"Make this man to understand the vision"* (v.16). So he began explaining the vision to him. When Gabriel reached the point of the 2,300 days (v.26), Daniel collapsed and was ill for some time. He regained his strength and resumed doing the king's business but was much concerned regarding the unexplained portion of the vision, the 2,300 day time period.

Daniel prayed earnestly for his people, the Jews who were in captivity in Medo-Persia. He confessed his sins and pleaded with God to forgive His people. Daniel chapter 9 begins with the prophet's earnest prayer of confession and appeal to God.

Then Gabriel returned to Daniel to explain the rest of the vision, saying, *"I am now come forth to give thee skill and understanding... therefore understand the matter and consider the vision."*

*"Seventy weeks are determined [cut off] upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy."*

(Daniel 9:24)

Just as one prophetic day represents one year of real time, so seven prophetic days denotes "seven years" (*"Fulfil her week... seven... years"* - Genesis 29:27) - and 70 weeks (70 x 7 = 490) denotes 490 years of real time.

Seventy weeks (490 years' real time) would be "determined upon," or cut off from the 2,300 years, for Daniel's people, the Jews, and their capital city, Jerusalem (Daniel 9:24).

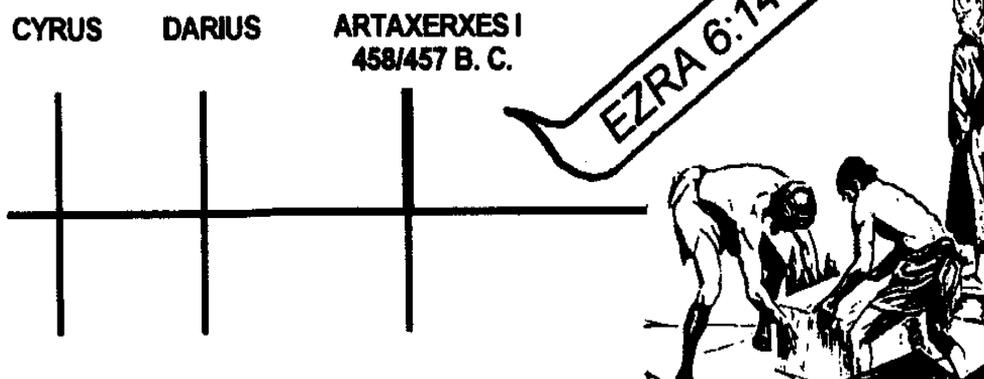
God's people would soon be returning from captivity in Medo-Persia, and God would cut off 490 years from the 2,300 years and allot them to His chosen people as another opportunity to repent and serve Him.

*Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and build Jerusalem UNTO MESSIAH THE PRINCE shall be seven weeks, and sixty- two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times.*  
(Daniel 9:25)

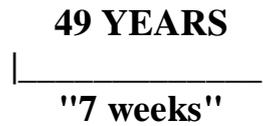
**The starting point** for the 2,300-day prophecy was a decree from Persian King Artaxerxes authorizing God's people (captive in Medo-Persia) to return to Jerusalem and rebuild the city. The decree, found in Ezra chapter 7, was issued in 457 BC - the seventh year of the king (verse 7)--and was implemented in the autumn. Artaxerxes began his reign in 464 B.C.

*"And they builded, and finished it, according to the commandment of the God of Israel, and according to the commandment of Cyrus, and Darius, and Artaxerxes king of Persia."* (Ezra 6:14)

Decrees of:



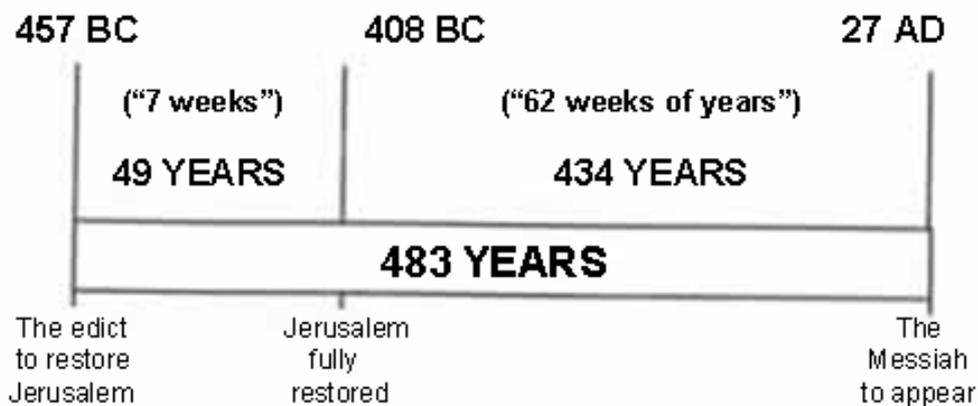
Here, then, are our first seven “weeks” in Daniel’s prophecy.



*“Until Messiah the Prince there will be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks.”* (Daniel 9:25) That is, seven “weeks of years” (49 years) to rebuild the city, followed by 62 “weeks of years” ( $62 \times 7 = 434$  years) duration of the restored city — till the Messiah!

The Jewish writer, J. J. Slotki, says:

*"Jerusalem will be a fully restored city during a period of 434 years."* (J.J. Slotki, J.J. *Daniel, Ezra, and Nehemiah*, P.7)



The angel said that 69 prophetic weeks, or 483 literal years ( $69 \times 7 = 483$ ), added to 457 B.C. would reach to the Messiah (Daniel 9:25). Did it?

Yes, indeed! Mathematical calculations show that moving ahead 483 full years from the autumn of 457 BC reaches the autumn of AD 27. The word "Messiah" means "anointed" (John 1:41, margin). Jesus was anointed with the Holy Ghost (Acts 10:38) at His baptism (Luke 3:21, 22). His anointing took place in the 15th year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar (Luke 3:1), which was AD 27. *And to think the prediction was made more than 500*

*years before!*

Then Jesus began to preach that "the time is fulfilled" (referring to the 483 years which were to reach to the Messiah). He thus audibly confirmed the prophecy (Mark 1:14, 15 Galatians 4:4). So Jesus actually began His ministry by clearly referring to the 2,300-day prophecy, stressing its importance and accuracy.

**QUESTION:** We have now considered 483 years of the 490-year prophecy. There is one prophetic week, or seven literal years, left (Daniel 9:26, 27). What happens next? When does it happen?

#### **70 WEEKS OF YEARS (490 Years)**

<b>69 Weeks (483 YEARS)</b>		<b><i>1 Week</i></b> <b><i>(7 YEARS)</i></b>
<b>Jerusalem rebuilt</b>  <b>7 weeks (49 years)</b>	<b>62 weeks (434 years)</b>	<b>70th week</b>

**ANSWER:** Jesus is "*cut off*" or crucified "*in the midst of the week,*" which is three and one-half years after His anointing, or the spring of A.D. 31. Please notice how the gospel is revealed in verse 26: "*After threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself.*"

#### **A violent death**

"*And after the 62 weeks,*" says the literal Hebrew language of Daniel's prophecy, "*shall Messiah be cut off.*" (Daniel 9:26) That is, ***after*** the full 62 week period of the sequence of events

in the prophecy, shall Messiah die. *During the 70th week*, in other words.

The prophet Isaiah spoke in similar terms regarding the coming Messiah. He will be ***“CUT OFF out of the land of the living”***. (Isaiah 53:3-8)

7 weeks	62 weeks	1 week
69 weeks		70th week "Messiah... cut off"
----- 483 years -----		----- 7 years -----

It does not tell us how soon “after”. We need a specific phrase to place the timing of the event. We shall see, shortly, that the prophecy gives that timing in the next verse.

The expression **“CUT OFF”** implies that Messiah would not die a natural death, but His life would be cut short *violently!*

Praise God, when Jesus was cut off, it was *"not for Himself"*. He *"who did no sin"* (1 Peter 2:22) was crucified for our sins (1 Corinthians 15:3. Isaiah 53:5).

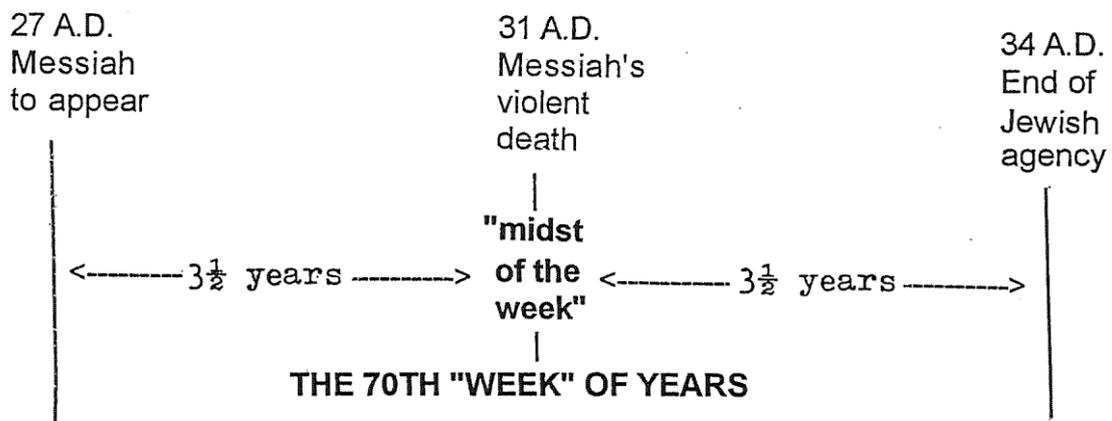
Jesus' priceless life was lovingly and willingly offered to save us from sin. Hallelujah, what a Saviour! Jesus' atoning sacrifice is the very heart of Daniel chapters 8 and 9.

Jesus is "cut off" or crucified "in the midst of the week," which is three and one-half years after His anointing, or the spring of AD 31. Please notice how the gospel is revealed in verse 26: *"After threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself."*

## “After 3½ years”

*In the midst of the week [of the 7 years] he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease.*  
(Daniel 9:27)

When Jesus died, that was the final and complete sacrifice. All other sacrifices had pointed forward to that event, and from that moment onward **they ceased** to have any significance.



*"He shall confirm the covenant with many for one week."*  
(Daniel 9:27 - meaning *"For one week, the Messiah shall confirm with many God's promise of rescue for man."*):

**QUESTION:** Since Jesus died after three and one-half years, how could He "confirm the covenant with many" for the full final seven years, as the prophecy in Daniel 9:27 mandates?

**ANSWER:** The **covenant** is His wonderful agreement to save people from their sins (Hebrews 10:16, 17). First Jesus **confirmed the covenant** in His own personal ministry of three and one-half years, then through His disciples (Hebrews 2:3). He sent them first to the Jewish nation (Matthew 10:5, 6), because His chosen people still had three and one-half years remaining of their 490-year opportunity to repent.

Mark states that when the disciples went publicly to Israel, that their Lord was “**confirming** the word with signs following.” (Mark 16:20)

Again, Paul wrote to his Jewish kinsmen, “*How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was **confirmed** to us by them that heard Him.*” (Hebrew 2:3)

Can you see? In a very real sense, the ministry of the disciples was a continuation of the ministry of Jesus himself. This is how the Messiah would “**confirm the covenant**” with “**many**” (that is, the Jews) for “*one week*” (seven years).

When the 490-year period of final opportunity for the Jewish nation ended in the autumn of AD 34, what did the disciples do? **Answer:** They began preaching the gospel to other people and nations of the world (Acts 13:46). Stephen, a righteous deacon, was publicly stoned in AD 34.

From that date onward the Jewish nation, *because it rejected Jesus and God's plan*, was no longer God's chosen people or nation. Instead, God now counts people of all nationalities who accept and serve Him as *spiritual Jews*. They have become His chosen people - “*heirs according to the promise.*” Spiritual Jews do, of course, include Jewish people who individually accept and serve Jesus (Galatians 3:27-29; Romans 2:28, 29).

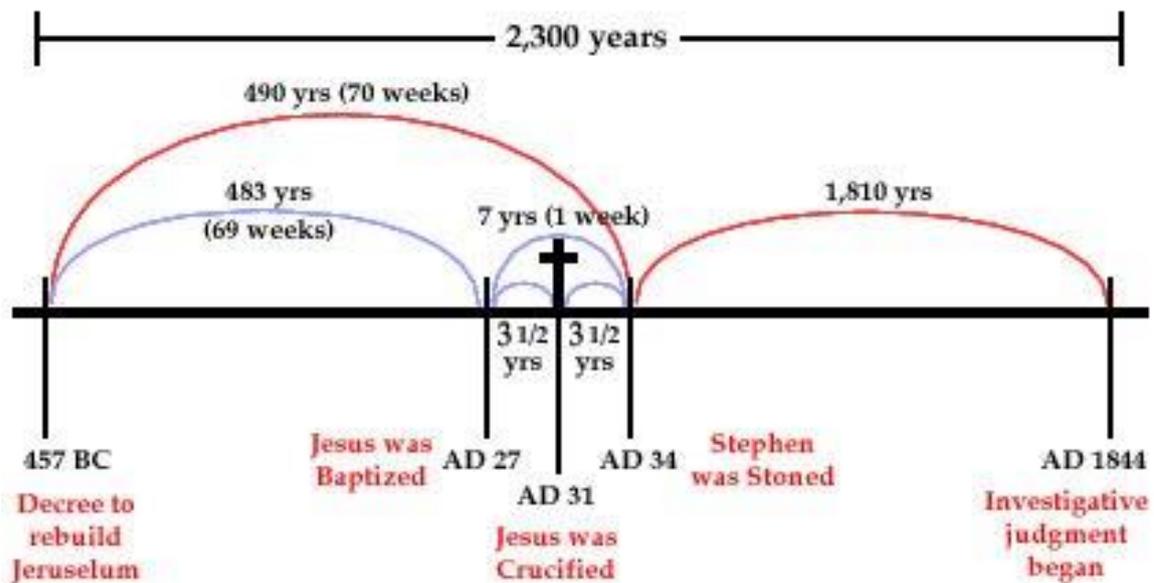
## **The 2,300 year chart**

**QUESTION:** After AD 34, how many years of the 2,300-year prophecy remained? What is the ending date for the prophecy? What did the angel say would happen on that date (Daniel 8:14)?

**ANSWER:** There were 1,810 years remaining (2,300 minus 490 = 1,810). The ending date for the prophecy is 1844 (AD 34

+ 1810 = 1844). The angel said the heavenly sanctuary would be cleansed, or the heavenly judgment would begin. (The earthly sanctuary was destroyed in AD 70, so longer existed.)

A comparison of Daniel chapter 7 with chapter 8 shows that the heavenly day of atonement, or judgment, was appointed for the end time. Now we know that the beginning date is 1844.



God set this date. It is as certain as the AD 27 date for Jesus to become the Messiah. And God's end-time people must be announcing it (Revelation 14:6, 7).

Daniel 8:14 - *"Unto 2300 days [in 1844 onward], then shall the sanctuary be cleansed."*

In Noah's day, God stated that the Flood judgment would occur in 120 years (Genesis 6:3) and it happened. In Daniel's day, God stated that His end-time judgment would begin when the 2,300 year prophecy ends (Daniel 8:14) and it happened. God's **end-time judgment** in the heavenly sanctuary has been in session since 1844. We shall address this fully in Chapter 28. **Soon after** this judgment finishes, **Jesus will return.**

## 20

# THE RAPTURE THEORY

The teaching that there will be a secret coming of Christ **before** the appearance of the "Antichrist" ("man of sin"), has become widely believed in this century. Many fine Christian people have accepted it with little or no investigation.

### *WHAT IS THE THEORY?*

1. God's people will be raptured from this earth.
2. Then the tribulation on earth will begin. An evil person called the antichrist will make a 7 year peace treaty with the Jews, but after 3 1/2 years will break his pledge and stop the Jews from all their sacrifices, and he himself will sit in a rebuilt temple proclaiming himself to be God.
3. Then Jesus' Second Coming in glory will occur.

### *CHURCH HISTORY EVIDENCE*

The visible, audible, sudden worldwide interruption of history at Christ's second coming is taught at length in the Bible. And the signs given by Jesus to alert us as to when it is near, are all converging upon us now.

But the "rapture" theory is something different.

It was NOT taught by the early Christian church.

It was NOT taught by the church of the first centuries.

It was NOT taught by the Reformers.

It was NOT taught by anyone until around the year 1830!

This means it was NOT part of the true original faith that was once delivered to the saints. It is not the old time gospel.

EVERY church writer through history, until around 1830, who deals with this subject, expects God's people to suffer at the

hands of Antichrist.

Many early writers could be quoted. For example, Irenaeus (130-202, disciple of an immediate disciple of John), spoke of “*the resurrection of the just, which takes place **after** the coming of Antichrist.*” He spoke of kings who “*shall give their kingdom to the beast, and put the **church** to flight. After that they shall be destroyed by the coming of our Lord.*” (Irenaeus, *Against Heresies*, chapter 35:1; 26:1)

### ***HOW IT BEGAN AND WHY***

The word “rapture” is NEVER found in the Word of God. Its origin is Latin and very Roman Catholic.

This theory did NOT originate from good Bible-based Protestant research. Not at all. Throughout history, the Christian world had NEVER taught it.

### ***THE REFORMATION***

Looking down through the centuries, there are certain names that stand out in Christian history, such as John Wyclif, John Huss, Martin Luther, Philipp Melancton, Huldreich Zwingli, William Tyndale, Nicholas Ridley, Hugh Latimer, John Foxe, Edwin Sandys, John Calvin, John Knox, King James, Isaac Newton, Thomas Newton, John Wesley.

**NONE** of these men believed that Christ would return in two phases – the rapture and then later the revelation. **NONE** of these men believed the church would be taken out before the appearance of Antichrist. To the contrary, they believed that God’s people would suffer at the hands of Antichrist and that the career of the “man of sin” would be ended by the coming of Christ at the end of the age.

As already stated, the secret pre-tribulation rapture doctrine was

NOT taught until around 1830. **How, then, did this teaching originate?**

During the Reformation, the Protestant Reformers, to the last man, were exposing the Roman Catholic system as the antichrist – the "beast" of Revelation, the "man of sin" of Paul's writings (2 Thess.2:3-12) and the "little horn" of Daniel 7.

For instance, the first sermon John Knox preached in Scotland was on Daniel 7, in which he proved that the church of Rome was the "little horn" of that prophecy. The papacy was the "man of sin" – the Antichrist. The evidence was overwhelming. Scotland was shaken. The prophecy was so clear.

John Wesley preached: The "*Romish Papacy*" "*is...the Man of Sin... that exalteth himself above all that is called God.*"  
(*Explanatory Notes Upon the New Testament*, p.290)

Martin Luther: "*the papacy is the seat of the true and real Antichrist*"; "*nothing else than the kingdom of Babylon*"; "*he suppresses the Law of God and exalts his commandments above the commandments of God.*" (*First Principles*, pp. 196,197)

This publicity dealt havoc to the Church of Rome. Across Europe her power was collapsing. She had suppressed the Bible. Now the preaching of the Bible shook the papacy to her knees. It looked as though the papacy was finished. In the preface of the King James Bible are found these words: "*Which hath given such a blow unto that man of sin, as will not be healed.*"

### ***ROME'S COUNTER ATTACK***

So great was the reaction to truth that in 1516 at the Fifth Lateran Council a decree was passed FORBIDDING anyone writing or preaching on the subject of the Antichrist.

Rome's counter-attack was twofold:

1. To take the heat off the papacy, Rome ***concocted the theory of Futurism*** (stating that the Antichrist is not the papal system, but rather some future individual).
2. The strategy was then to ***infiltrate Protestantism and neutralise it***. Go undercover into Bible colleges and influence the future thinking of Protestant churches.

The Jesuit Francisco Ribera (1537-1591) invented Futurism by tossing all the prophecies into the future. He asserted that a Jewish temple would be built again in Jerusalem and that Antichrist would be a single individual who would deny Christ, pretend to be God and rule the world. He would persecute the Jews and not the saints. He would be Jewish, not Roman. In Jerusalem and not in Rome.

Says Allis: *“The futurist interpretation is traced back to the Jesuit Ribera whose aim was to disprove the claim of the Reformers that the Pope was the Antichrist.”* (Allis, *Prophecy and the Church*, p.297)

Not only Protestant, but Catholic writers as well, have recognised that this futurist interpretation about antichrist originated with Ribera.

*“The futuristic school,”* says one Catholic theologian, *“founded by the Jesuit Ribera in 1591, looks for Antichrist, Babylon, and a rebuilt temple in Jerusalem, at the end of the Christian dispensation.”* (Hitchcock, *The Beasts and the Little Horn*, p.7)

In his tract *Who is the Antichrist?*, a former Roman Catholic priest, Joseph Zacchello, says:

*“The Jesuits, a militant order of priests... were the first ones to introduce a new theory in order to divert men’s minds from perceiving the fulfilment of the prophecies of the antichrist in the papal church. The Jesuit Ribera... brought out the futuristic system, which asserts that the antichrist is yet to appear.”*

And to this statement he adds:

*“Protestants who advocate the futuristic system are pleasing the pope and are **playing into the hands of Rome.**”* (Ladd, *The Blessed Hope*)

The Reformer Thomas Brightman (1562-1607), when he saw Ribera's work, said in disgust, *“Once they would not suffer any man to scarce touch a Bible, now they produce a commentary to explain it – to point men away from the Papal Antichrist.”* This was the beginning of Futurism.

### ***ROME INFILTRATES PROTESTANTISM***

Rome now aimed to get this new interpretation into Protestantism.

Manuel Lacunza Diaz (1731-1801), a Jesuit priest, wrote under the assumed name of Rabbi Ben Ezra, supposedly a learned Jew turned Christian. By this means he got his book *The Coming of Messiah in Glory and Majesty* accepted among Protestants. They would not permit a Jesuit book into their homes, but as the work of a “converted Jew” they would consume it avidly.

In this book, Lacunza promoted the novel idea that Jesus returns not once, but twice, and at the first stage of His return He “raptures” His church so that they can escape the reign of antichrist, which is future.

Pro-Roman Catholic preachers would help it get off the ground.

In the 1820s, at Oxford University, there arose a number of avid proponents for the reunion of the Church of England with the Roman Catholic church. They were led by Professor S.R. Maitland, librarian to the Archbishop of Canterbury, Professor

James Todd, Fellow of Trinity College in Dublin, Ireland; and Professor Bird.

They sent this message of reuniting with Rome to their theology students. But there was an outcry from the Anglican church that “*we can never unite with Rome. It is the antichrist of prophecy.*”

The Jesuit Ribera's book sat on the shelf for about 200 years. But now Maitland dusted it off and read it. From this, Maitland wrote the first Bible commentary to say, “The papacy is not the antichrist. It is a person who will appear at the end of time.” This teaching was then spread to Cambridge University.

Edward Irving translated the Jesuit Lacunza's book into English in 1827. And in the 1830s began the Oxford Movement, which was simply the Catholicising of Oxford University.

John Darby, an influential figure of the original Plymouth brethren, arrived at Oxford just as the Oxford Movement was taking full flight. There he imbibed all of the futurist teachings of the Roman Catholic Jesuits. These ideas he would eventually introduce into the Protestant United States. Darby developed and organised this futurist theory into a system of Dispensation-ism and popularised it among the Plymouth Brethren.

Then a convicted forger, wife deserter and life-long con man, Cyrus Ingersoll Schofield, imbibed Darby's teachings. In 1905, he went over to the Catholicised Oxford University and talked to them about bringing out a reference Bible with commentaries and notes in it. They were jubilant. They gave Schofield a tentative agreement that they would publish the Schofield Reference Bible. This was released in 1909.

It was riddled with the Roman Catholic Futurism, designed to divert attention from the papacy as the antichrist and thus ***derail the Protestant movement***. Schofield's Bibles were distributed by the millions throughout the USA by door to door sellers. It

did more to desensitise America and subsequently the world, to Rome, than anything else.

### ***THE RESULT***

It took about 400 years for Ribera's "Antichrist" theory to catch on. But today most Protestants have imbibed it.

And today Futurism, amplified and adorned with the rapture theory, has become the generally accepted belief of the Fundamental wing of popular Protestantism.

Today many Protestants speak avidly of:

- Christ coming in the secret rapture.
- Then the church to be raptured.
- Then this satanically controlled man to reign in the rebuilt temple in Jerusalem for 3 ½ years. Things will not go too badly during this time.
- Then, in the last 3 ½ years he will persecute unbelievably.

It sounds good, doesn't it? You won't have to go through the tribulation. You'll be raptured out of the way first.

### ***WHERE DID THE "7 YEARS" COME FROM?***

**ANSWER:** It came from Daniel 9:27, which speaks of a 7 year period.

All Bible scholars, whether Jewish or Christian, recognise that each "week" in the "70 weeks" prophecy of Daniel 9:24-27 represents seven years, and that 70 weeks refers to 70 sevens of years, that is, 490 years.

$$70 \times 7 = 490$$

This is exactly ten jubilee cycles (49 x 10). The significance of this cannot be overstated. This tiny point completely eliminates the possibility that the 70<sup>th</sup> week can be separated from the other 69 and pushed to some time in the future. According to the Bible Jubilee principle, the 70<sup>th</sup> week can occur only sequentially after the 69<sup>th</sup> week. Jubilee weeks cannot be separated from each other any more than weeks can be separated in our calendar today. Week 69 follows week 68 and week 70 follows week 69.

***THE RAPTURE THEORY:  
“A BIG TIME GAP  
BETWEEN DANIEL’S  
69 WEEKS AND 70<sup>TH</sup> WEEK”***

**IT IS CLAIMED:** Although the first 69 weeks of Daniel chapter 9 are consecutive, the 70<sup>th</sup> week is separated in time to be 2,000 years later. The 70<sup>th</sup> week is a 7 year period to occur in the last days, after the rapture.

**IN REALITY:** There is no justification for separating one week from the other 69. The **Hebrew language** implies a single, connected 70 week unit.

The **Hebrew actually says**, “*Seventy weeks IS determined upon thy people.*” (Dan.9:24) That is, the Hebrew verb which is translated into English as “*are* determined” is SINGULAR (Because “IS” in this sentence would sound awkward in English, it is rendered “are” in English.) But the actual wording in the original Hebrew is this: “*Seventy weeks IS [not are] determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city.*”

The importance of this being singular, is that the term “seven weeks” is **PLURAL**, while the verb is **SINGULAR**. The

construction here – the *singular verb with a plural noun* – indicates that the seventy weeks collectively denote a *single unit* of time. The use of a singular verb indicates that the period is not to be understood as separate weeks, but is to be treated **as ONE UNIT**. As Lange points out, “*The verb in the singular indicates the unity or singleness of this entire period.*” (Lange Commentary, Vol. on Daniel, p.188)

This indicates that there is *no gap* between the 69<sup>th</sup> and 70<sup>th</sup> weeks. Therefore the last week of the 70 *cannot* be considered as separated from the rest and cannot be placed somewhere in the future.

The seventy weeks prophecy was given to Daniel as something he could “understand” (Dan.9:25). Daniel knew nothing of any gaps or stopped clocks!

And history demonstrates that the events of the 70<sup>th</sup> week have already been fulfilled perfectly and wonderfully. (See Chapter 19.)

### ***WHY IS THE FUTURIST USE OF DANIEL 9 INVALID?***

The futurist use of Daniel 9 is invalid for two reasons.

**Firstly**, this theory pushes the last week of the 70 away into the future, unconnected to the other 69 weeks of the prophecy. It requires a huge “gap” between the 69<sup>th</sup> and 70<sup>th</sup> weeks. All of the first 69 weeks follow each other in logical order without a break to measure time until the Messiah. They follow each other in sequence *as continuous, consecutive* weeks. No “gaps” are allowed between these.

But then, according to the futurist theory, they jump over about 2,000 years and 70<sup>th</sup> week is placed at the end of the age.

Here is my question: Why separate the 70<sup>th</sup> from the 69<sup>th</sup> week by a gap of 2,000 years? Since when does 70 not follow 69?

If you have such a gap, then we could also put gaps in *other* places – and instead of the prophecy counting unto the Messiah – as it so wonderfully does – it could be applied to anyone, just depending on how many years we might choose to put in a “gap”! Such methods would destroy the very purpose for which this *time*-prophecy was given.

Suppose a man asks me, “How long is the journey to such and such a place?”

I reply, “It is 70 miles.”

“Thankyou,” he says.

Then I add, “Oh, I should tell you this. The first 69 miles are consecutive miles, but as you complete the 69<sup>th</sup> mile, you will find a sign telling you that the 70<sup>th</sup> or last mile is about 2,000 miles on down the road.”

Or suppose two Australian men are leaving Brisbane to drive to Adelaide. The one man asks the driver: “How far is it to Adelaide?”

“Seventy miles,” the driver answers. But after they drive 69 miles, they are far from Adelaide. They are still in Queensland, in fact!

“Didn’t you tell me it was 70 miles from Brisbane to Adelaide?”

“Well, it is 70 miles from Brisbane to Adelaide,” the driver replies. “But there is a gap, a space in between, of 2,000 miles I didn’t tell you about. You see, the odometer is set so that it registers only the first 69 miles and then stops. When we have driven another 2,000 miles and start the final mile into Adelaide,

then it will start again and tick out the 70<sup>th</sup> mile!”

To put it another way, the gap theory is like a man with a yardstick who cut off the last inch and attached a piece of elastic between the 35<sup>th</sup> and 36<sup>th</sup> inches. Then he could stretch the 36<sup>th</sup> inch out as far as he wanted from the 35<sup>th</sup> inch. **He could make it fit about any length he wanted!** But in so doing he defeated the very purpose for which the yardstick was intended.

Or suppose your builder says, “I’ll build your house in seven weeks.” On the sixth week, he waves goodbye and say, “I’ll be back next year to finish the house.” You protest, “But you said you would complete it in seven weeks.” He responds, “That’s right. But the seventh week will be next year.” Well?...

The same inconsistency exists in the futurist practice of separating the 70<sup>th</sup> week from the 69<sup>th</sup> week by a gap of 2,000 years or so. But that’s not what Daniel’s 70 weeks says. There’s no gap. It is an unbroken unit.

**Secondly**, this prophecy of Daniel 9 has nothing to do with any Antichrist.

It foretells an unbroken period of “70 weeks” (490 years) which pinpoints the first coming of the Messiah. It prophesies powerfully the salvation to be brought to us by Jesus. It tells of the Messiah appearing, confirming the gospel message to the Jewish people for 7 years, and by His death bringing an end to sacrifices after 3 ½ years.

Notice that verse 24 is speaking of what the **Messiah** was to accomplish: “...*to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness,*” etc., etc.

Then verse 25 tells how long it will be *till “the **Messiah**” appears.*

Then verse 26 says that after that “*shall Messiah be cut off*”.

Then verse 27 says “*And he shall confirm the covenant,*” etc. This “he” makes no sense unless “**HE**” refers back to the same person already spoken about – that is, the **Messiah**. Just think very carefully about that. “*Daniel predicts the precise year of Christ’s appearance and the beginning of his ministry in A.D. 27.*” (*The Expositor’s Bible Commentary*, Vol.7, p.9)

### ***THE COVENANT TO PREVAIL 7 YEARS***

Daniel wrote, “*He shall confirm the COVENANT with many for one week*” (Daniel 9:27)

An equally valid translation of this passage is: “One week shall establish the covenant” or “*For one week the covenant shall prevail.*” Of course, “*one week*” denotes seven years

The prophet Malachi called the coming Messiah “*the messenger of THE COVENANT*” (Malachi 3:1) This is the everlasting covenant of mercy that God had made with the human family, the promise that He had given to Adam.

By the events of this seven year period, the covenant would be forever confirmed and strengthened. It would prevail “*with many*” of Daniel’s people, the Jews. This divine covenant was to triumph in the ministry of the Messiah to Israel — a ministry which was to be a unique demonstration of patient, forgiving love.

(False interpretations of this passage have had it that some evil character will “make” a covenant with the Jews, then break it. However the original Hebrew word here is *never translated “make”*. It is usually translated “prevail”. *Nobody was to “make” a covenant.*)

If Daniel had wished to state that a covenant would be made, why did he not use the ordinary Hebrew idiom for such a thought? instead, he used a verb based on the Hebrew root *gaber* - which connotes “**to prevail**” (to persist, to predominate, to win, to have real success. See, for example, Genesis 7:18; 49:26; Exodus 17:11; Lamentations 1:16)

Jesus confirmed His covenant of mercy for three and one-half years, then His disciples confirmed His covenant for three and one-half years. In a very real sense, the ministry of the disciples was a continuation of the ministry of Jesus Himself. This is how the Messiah would "confirm the covenant" with many (that is, the Jews) for seven years.

What about the temple? Yes, it does mention a **temple**, but what temple? Please note the context.

1. The prophecy begins with Jerusalem and its temple in ruins. (Dan.9:2,17) This was during the Jewish exile in Babylon (6<sup>th</sup> century BC).
2. The Lord promises that Jerusalem and its temple will be rebuilt. (Dan. 9:24,25)
3. But later, this same city and temple will be destroyed. (Dan.9:26,27) The destroyer (“the abomination of desolation”) was the Roman empire, in 70 AD.
4. In this prophecy, there is only one temple – that one destroyed by the Romans in 70 AD. There is no end times temple mentioned. Not anywhere.

How has this Daniel 9 prophecy been understood through history?

- |                      |   |
|----------------------|---|
| Jewish scholars      | – “It foretells <b>the Messiah.</b> ”         |
| Early Christians     | – “It foretells <b>the Messiah.</b> ”         |
| Protestant Reformers | – “It foretells <b>the Messiah.</b> ”         |
| Rome’s Jesuits       | – “It foretells <b>a future antichrist.</b> ” |

There you have it!

1. The Bible-burning **papacy** claims the person predicted in Daniel 9 is **the antichrist** near the end of time.
2. The Bible-believing **Protestant** Reformers claim that the person predicted in Daniel 9 is the Messiah.

### ***ROME CHANGED THE TIMES***

And does Satan hate this prophecy! Why? Because the arithmetic in this prophecy converts atheists and Jews to the true Messiah. So, through Rome, he has tampered with this beautiful prophecy concerning the true, spotless Christ and degraded it into some future act of an evil man!

Daniel himself predicted that Rome (the little horn power) *“shall think to **change times.**”* (Dan.7:25)

So has Rome done this? Has Rome changed the times? Yes! In violating the connected sequence of this “70 weeks” (490 years) prophecy of Daniel 9, she has separated its “**times**” and pushed them 2,000 years apart, when they belong together as one unit. She has changed the times. She has violated this sacred time prophecy of Daniel 9.

### ***DANGER OF THE RAPTURE THEORY***

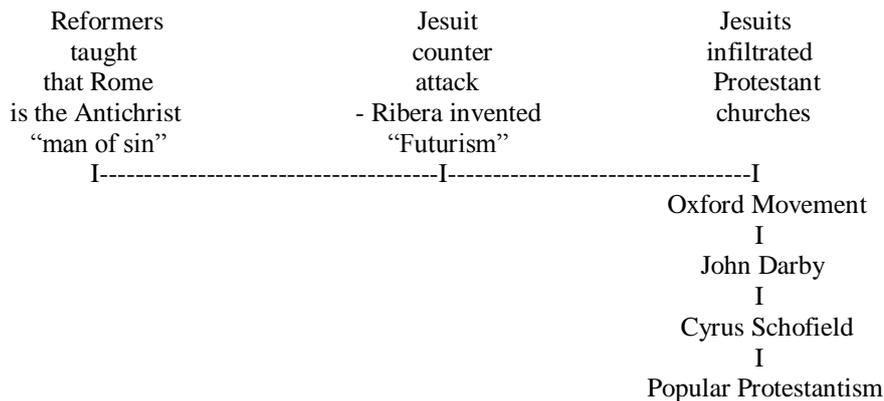
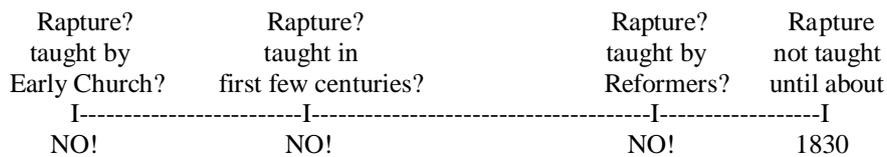
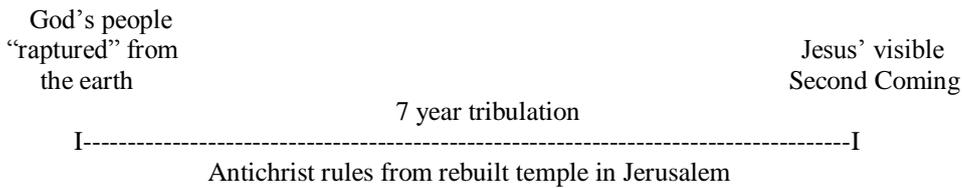
The theory of Futurism and the rapture is not only non-biblical, but it is dangerous for four reasons:

1. It plays into the hands of **Rome**.
2. It **degrades** the Daniel 9 prophecy of the righteous Jesus into the future act of an evil man.
3. The belief of some Christians that God will be rapturing them out of the tribulation that is to come has essentially "neutralized" them into **not preparing**. When they find that they are still on Earth and without food and water and things

necessary for their survival, they will be helpless to "resist" these forces of evil.

4. Many Christians think that Jesus will appear before the great tribulation and take them out of this world. When their expectations are not realised and they find themselves in tribulation, many will be disillusioned, will *lose their faith*, and give in to the mark of the beast, thus losing their salvation.

### RAPTURE THEORY



DANIEL 9: "70 WEEKS" (490 YEARS) I-----69 weeks-----I---1 week---I  
 483 years 7 years  
 The Messiah

THE TRUTH

I-----69 weeks-----I  
 483 years Time gap of 2,000 years

I---1 week---  
 Antichrist

FALSE THEORY

## 21 THE TRIBULATION AND SECOND COMING



**QUESTION:** How many Second Comings will there be?

**ANSWER:** *“So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the [actually, “a”] second time without sin unto salvation.”*  
(Heb.9:28) **The “second time” is singular, not plural. There is only one Second Coming.**

**QUESTION:** When is the Second Coming?

**ANSWER:** **Not until the time of “restoration of all things.”**  
(Acts 3:20,21) Compare the following references carefully – and you will notice that Jesus will not gather up His people until **AFTER the tribulation.** Jesus will gather up His people at the **SAME TIME** that the **rulers of this world** are brought to an **end.**

## IN REALITY

<p><b>FIRST</b> comes the <b>TRIBULATION</b> (Matt. 24:29), before which God's people are to "FLEE" (Matt.24:15-21). (Not to be raptured out of the earth, but to FLEE.)</p>	<p><b>THEN</b> comes the <b>TRUMPET</b> (Matt.24:30-31. Compare vv.26-28) This is also called "THE LAST TRUMP" (1 Cor.15:52) and the <b>THE 7<sup>TH</sup> TRUMPET</b>, when earth's rulers are brought to an end. (Rev. 11:15) At <b>THIS "LAST TRUMP"</b> is the <b>RESURRECTION</b> (1 Cor. 15:50-51). 1 Thess.4:16-17) when Jesus comes with a <b>SHOUT, VOICE...</b> and <b>TRUMPET...</b> and <b>LIGHTNING</b> and the <b>TRIBES MOURN</b> as they <b>SEE Him</b> coming (Matt.24:27-31) The Bible says that this is when the <b>SAINTS ARE GATHERED – NOT</b> secretly in an earlier rapture, but <b>NOW – at His visible SECOND COMING!!!</b></p>
<p><b>FIRST</b> comes the <b>MARK OF THE BEAST</b> (Rev.20:4). This is part of the <b>TRIBULATION</b> which God's people must endure (John 16:33. Acts 14:22). At this time many of God's people are <b>beheaded</b> (Rev.20:4). The evil ruling power will "<b>OVERCOME THE SAINTS</b>", God's people (Rev.13:7) - so the saints are not raptured out and taken to heaven before this happens. When the <b>Mark of the Beast</b> is enforced (Rev.14:9-11), those who refuse it will be God's people who have "patience" -endurance (Rev.14:12). God's people on earth will <b>ENDURE</b> to the end and be saved (Matt.10:22; 24:13. Mark 13:13).</p>	<p><b>THEN</b> comes the <b>RESURRECTION</b> for the saints (God's people) to receive their reward and reign with Jesus (Rev.20:4-6). This resurrection is "<b>THE FIRST RESURRECTION</b>" - and it is at "<b>THE LAST DAY</b>" (John 6:39-40,44,54). How many days are there after the <b>LAST day</b>? <b>CRUCIAL:</b> There is <b>ONLY ONE</b> first resurrection. And it is <b>AFTER</b> the great <b>Mark of the Beast</b> tribulation. <b>SUM UP:</b> God's people go through the end-times tribulation and many of them are beheaded for not accepting the <b>Beast's Mark</b>, but after that they are raised to live with Christ 1,000 years.</p>

**FIRST** comes the "MAN OF SIN", the antichrist (2 Thess.2:1-3), who brings the tribulation.

**THEN** the RETURN OF JESUS to GATHER His people. ("our gathering unto Him" (2 Thess. 2:1) "That day shall not come except [until]" first the man of sin does his work.

Jesus says His people will be on the planet UNTIL THE END OF THE WORLD:

Matthew 28:19,20 - *"Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them... Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am **with you** always, even UNTO THE END OF THE WORLD."*

Matthew 24:40-41 - *"One shall be taken, and the other left."*

**WHO IS TAKEN?** Compare these parallel texts:

Matthew 24:37-39  
**"taken away"**  
 Who was "taken away" by the Flood?  
 Answer: Those who were destroyed. They were **taken in destruction.**

Luke 17:26-27  
**"destroyed them all"**  
 So again it will be.  
 (These will be the ones whose flesh the birds will eat – vv.34-37. Rev.19:17-18)

Notice how these words, "taken" and "left" are used in Bible prophecy:

- \* Isaiah 8:15. Ezekiel 16:50 - **"taken" = destroyed.** Who are "taken"? Answer: Those who are lost.
- \* Isaiah 24:6 - **"left" = alive.** Who are "left" (alive)? Answer: God's people.

At the Second Coming there are four types of people:

1. the faithful dead – These rise first. (1 Thess.4:16-17)
2. the faithful living – THEN (and not before), these are caught up.
3. the wicked dead – stay dead (until the 2<sup>nd</sup> resurrection after the millennium)
4. the wicked living (destroyed by the brightness of Christ's return)

***WHEN ARE GOD'S PEOPLE  
REWARDED -TAKEN TO HEAVEN?***

**FIRST:** Jesus comes in glory (Luke 9:26)     **THEN:** At the time He comes in glory He will reward everyone – NOT before:

*Matthew 16:27 - "For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works."*

So there is NO rapture to a heavenly reward BEFORE this.

***“BECAUSE 2 GREEK WORDS ARE USED,  
SO WILL JESUS WILL COME TWICE”***

**IT IS CLAIMED:** Because the Greek uses two different words for the return of Jesus, then there must be two separate comings.

1. *Parousia* means “presence, coming”. This refers to the secret rapture.
2. *Apokalupsis* means “revealing”. This is the visible coming 7 years later.

**IN REALITY:** So is the *paraousia* secret and the *apokalupsis* public, 7 years later? Answer: *Parousia* and *apokalupsis* are interchangeable. They are used for the same event. Examples:

\* Matt.24:37 uses *parousia*  
 Luke 17:26-30 uses *apokalupsis*

But both are speaking of the very SAME event – not one a secret event and one public.

\* Matt.24:27 uses *parousia* (“coming”) when it speaks of the coming of Christ as visible, like lightning – His glorious public second coming.

\* Luke 17:26-37 uses *apokalupsis* (“revealed” – v.30), for the event in which one is taken and the other left! The “taking” occurs at His public second coming.

\* 2 Thess.2:8 uses *parousia* (“destroyed by the brightness of his coming”)

But the Rapture theory says that antichrist doesn’t even appear until AFTER the *paraousia*.

These Scriptures spell it out clearly that God’s people are NOT taken 7 years earlier, before the destruction.

Also, Jesus’ parable of the wheat and the tares teaches that **the tares (the wicked, to be destroyed) are gathered first, BEFORE the saved ones are gathered.** (Matt.13:24-30, 40-42. Note especially verse 30.)

***SECRET RAPTURE THEORY SAYS:  
 “PEOPLE WILL BE CONVERTED  
 AFTER THE SECOND COMING”***

**IT IS CLAIMED:** People will be converted after the Second Coming.

**IN REALITY:** There will be no converts after the Second Coming.

Revelation 22:11-12 - *“He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. [At that time, no more change of life possible. That is God’s decree. The day of mercy has ended.] And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.”*

***THE THEORY SAYS:  
“ANTICHRIST IS A PERSON”***

**IT IS CLAIMED:** The “man of sin” (Antichrist) of 2 Thessalonians 2 and the little horn of Daniel 7 and the first beast of Revelation 13 - which are all the same – are an individual person.

**IN REALITY:** It is true that these all describe the same entity. But the Bible itself defines what this entity is. In symbolic prophecy, the Bible always interprets itself.

Daniel 7:23 tells us that a beast signifies a kingdom, a system – NOT an individual person. And Daniel 8:8,22 says that a horn likewise represents a kingdom.

***THE THEORY SAYS:  
“THE SAINTS WILL NOT GO  
THROUGH TRIBULATION”***

**IT IS CLAIMED:** God’s people will be kept **from the hour of temptation.** (Rev.3:10) That means they will be raptured away to miss the tribulation.

**IN REALITY:** Instead of making up our own twist to a text, why don't we allow the Bible to explain itself. So what does "kept from" really mean? Notice:

<p>In John 17:6,15 Jesus prays concerning His followers: <i>"I pray <b>NOT</b> that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil."</i></p>	<p>Revelation 3:10 - <i>"I will <b>keep thee from the hour of temptation."</b></i></p>
--	--

You see, "*keep thee from the hour of temptation*" and "*keep them from the evil*" have the same meaning.

But this does NOT mean taking us out of the world (the rapture) at all! So what does it mean? Again, let's ask the Bible itself:

Speaking of the time of judgment that shall come upon the earth (including the plagues):

Psalm 91:7-10 - *"A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand: but it shall not come nigh thee. Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked. Because thou hast made the Lord, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling."*

The plagues will not fall on His people on earth.

The reality is this: God's saints will live through the seven last plagues and the persecutions. Read Rev.16:1-7. The plagues are poured out on those who accept "*the mark of the beast*" (v.2) and the waters become as blood. "*For they have shed the blood of the saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.*" (v.6)

The prophecy informs us that the second and third plagues are scourges of blood. Why? **Because they had spilt the blood of the saints.** That means the saints must still be on earth during the time of tribulation.

Yes, before we are rescued by Jesus at His coming, we must all go through tribulation:

Acts 14:22 - “...we must *through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.*”

2 Timothy 3:12 - “...all that will live godly in Christ Jesus *shall suffer persecution.*”

Jesus suffered for us. He says, “*A servant is not above his master.*” (Matthew 10:24) If our Master has suffered tribulation, can we expect to be honored with immunity from tribulation?

John 15:18,20 - “*If the world hate you, you know that it hated me before it hated you... If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you.*”

And so it was that His disciples later suffered for Him. Can we expect less? How dare we think we can have an easy ride!

However, remember this and praise our heavenly Father. As He did with millions of martyrs and others who simply suffered for their faith in Christ through the Dark Ages, so He will strengthen us to endure what we must pass through.

Matthew 5:10-12 - “*Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness’ sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.*”

Matthew 24:21,22 - *“For then shall be **great tribulation**, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor shall ever be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but **for the elect’s sake** those days shall be **shortened**.”*

What is Jesus saying to us? Simply this: that God’s faithful people (the saints, the elect) **will go through the tribulation – but for their sakes it will be shortened**. Why? Because they have **not** been raptured away from it!

Many on earth will refuse to accept the mark of the beast and will be martyred for their faithfulness to God:

Revelation 20:4 - *“I saw the souls of them that were **beheaded** for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had **not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark** upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.”*

Many others will survive: *“**alive and remain** unto the coming of the Lord.”* (1 Thess. 4:15,17)

Whether we are martyred or not, we’ll REMAIN on earth until the visible, noisy return of Jesus. That’s what the Bible says.

***THE THEORY SAYS:  
“JESUS WILL COME  
SECRETLY, LIKE A THIEF “***

**IT IS CLAIMED:** Jesus will come secretly, like a thief in the night. “But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night.” (2 Peter 3:10) That’s when He will rapture His people.

**IN REALITY:** The verse doesn't say the event will be secret. But that the "DAY" will come upon the world like a thief – that is, unexpectedly. You see, it is NOT talking about the NATURE of the event, but its TIMING.

Let's read the whole verse this time:

2 Peter 3:10 - *"But **the day** of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in which the heavens shall pass away with a **great noise**, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up."*

You notice, it is the TIME of His coming, "**the DAY**".

Compare this with 1 Thessalonians 5:1-6.

*"But of the **TIMES** and seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the **DAY of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night**. For when they shall say, Peace and safety, then **sudden** destruction cometh upon them... and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.... Therefore **let us not sleep, as do others, but let us watch...**"*

That's self explanatory, isn't it?

The event itself is NOT SECRET. It is the DAY, the TIMING, that is spoken of. It is SUDDEN... UNEXPECTED.

Jesus backs this up in Matthew 24:42-44.

*"Watch therefore: for ye know not **WHAT HOUR** your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the Goodman of the house had known **IN WHAT WATCH** [duty shift] **the thief** would come, he would have watched, and would not have*

*suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.”*

This same event whose **timing is sudden, unexpected, like that of a thief**, will be with a **“GREAT NOISE.”** (2 Pet.3:10) Does a GREAT NOISE sound like a secret rapture?

### ***REQUEST TO PRODUCE***

I challenge any promoter of the Rapture theory to produce one Bible statement supporting this theory. Let’s spell it out:

Produce one Bible text that says Jesus will return to take away the saints before the tribulation, and then return again after a 3 ½ year tribulation to establish His kingdom and bring an end to the governments of the world.

If the Rapture promoter cannot produce such biblical documentation, then let him honestly face the fact and admit that this is an unbiblical theory of questionable origins.

### ***WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS***

1. Jesus’ second coming occurs only once. In the scriptures, there is no indication of more than one event.
2. At that time, He will end both the tribulation and the governments of this world.
3. The dead in Christ are first raised from the dead.
4. Then those who are alive and remain here will rise also from the earth.
5. The day this occurs is called the “day of the Lord”. (1 Thess.5:2)

6. The “caught up” of 1 Thessalonians 4:17 occurs at His Second Coming, at the “last day” of this age.

## 22

# DANIEL'S PARALLEL PROPHECY PATTERN

CHAPTER 2	CHAPTER 7	CHAPTERS 8-9	CHAPTERS 11-12
“gold” Babylon (v.37-38)	“lion” Babylon (v.4)	Babylon is nearly ended when this prophecy is given to Daniel, so the prophecy begins with its successor	Babylon is past when this prophecy is given to Daniel, so the prophecy begins with its successor
“silver” Medo-Persia (v.32,39)	“bear” Medo-Persia (v.5)	“ram” Medo-Persia (8:2-4)	Medo-Persia (11:2)
“brass” Grecia (v.32,39)	“leopard” Grecia (v.6)	“goat” Grecia (8:5-8)	Grecia (11:3)
“iron” Rome (v.40-43)	“beast with ten horns” Rome - pagan then papal (v.7-8,23-25)	Rome - pagan then papal (8:9-12)	Rome - pagan then papal (11:20-45)
---	Judgment (v.9-10,21-22,26)	Sanctuary Cleansed (8:14)	Books opened (12:1)
---	Papal Rome destroyed (v.26)	Papal Rome destroyed (8:25)	---
God’s Kingdom (v.44)	God’s Kingdom (v.27)	---	Resurrection (12:2)

**Numerous specific details cross-link these chapters, and also to the book of Revelation. These corresponding details include matching identity phrases. However, it is beyond the scope of this work to present such intricate detail here.**

**Daniel chapter 2** gives a simple overview of coming events.

**Daniel chapter 7** repeats events of chapter 2, with more detail.

**Daniel chapters 8 and 9** follow basically the same scenario, again with more details provided.

**Daniel chapters 10 to 12** are largely parallel to the preceding prophecies, but add much more detail.

## 23

# THE DANIEL 10-12 PROPHECY

Unlike the prophecies of Daniel chapters 2, 7 and 8. which employ symbols, the prophecy of chapters 11-12 is *in literal language*.

This prophecy contains numerous details, covering a long time span from Medo-Persia to the end of the world. However, we shall not attempt a full-scale commentary, but rather address certain passages which are of greater interest than others.

### **Medo-Persia (Daniel 11:1-2)**

Dan.11:2 And now will I shew thee the truth. Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia; and the fourth shall be far richer than they all: and by his strength through his riches he shall stir up all against the realm of Grecia.

This “fourth” king of Persia after Cyrus was Xerxes (Greek name for Ahasuerus), the husband of Queen Esther, who ruled at the height of Persian power and wealth. He raised a huge army with contingents from forty different nations and attacked Greece around 480 BC.

The Persian invasion was eventually repelled, but it roused a burning desire on the part of the independent city states of Greece to unite and avenge themselves on the Persians.

### **Grecia (v.3)**

Dan.11:3 And a mighty king shall stand up, that shall rule with great dominion, and do according to his will.

This describes Alexander's conquests.

### **The divided empire (v.4)**

Dan.11:4 And when he shall stand up, his kingdom shall be broken, and shall be divided toward the four winds of heaven; and not to his posterity, nor according to his dominion which he ruled: for his kingdom shall be plucked up, even for others beside those.

This describes the subsequent four divisions of Alexander's kingdom.

Dan.11:5-15 And the king of the south shall be strong, and one of his princes; and he shall be strong above him, and have dominion; his dominion shall be a great dominion.

And in the end of years they shall join themselves together; for the king's daughter of the south shall come to the king of the north to make an agreement: but she shall not retain the power of the arm;

neither shall he stand, nor his arm: but she shall be given up, and they that brought her, and he that begat her, and he that strengthened her in these times.

But out of a branch of her roots shall one stand up in his estate, which shall come with an army, and shall enter into the fortress of the king of the north, and shall deal against them, and shall prevail:

And shall also carry captives into Egypt their gods, with their princes, and with their precious vessels of silver and of gold; and he shall continue more years than the king of the north.

So the king of the south shall come into his kingdom, and shall return into his own land.

But his sons shall be stirred up, and shall assemble a multitude of great forces: and one shall certainly come, and overflow, and pass through: then shall he return, and be stirred up, even to his fortress.

And the king of the south shall be moved with choler, and shall come forth and fight with him, even with the king of the north: and he shall set forth a great multitude; but the multitude shall be given into his hand.

And when he hath taken away the multitude, his heart shall be lifted up; and he shall cast down many

ten thousands: but he shall not be strengthened by it.

For the king of the north shall return, and shall set forth a multitude greater than the former, and shall certainly come after certain years with a great army and with much riches.

And in those times there shall many stand up against the king of the south: also the robbers of thy people shall exalt themselves to establish the vision; but they shall fall.

So the king of the north shall come, and cast up a mount, and take the most fenced cities: and the arms of the south shall not withstand, neither his chosen people, neither shall there be any strength to withstand.

These verses deal with the intricate details of the rulers and activities of the divided kingdom of Greece. Ultimately two of these divisions came to dominate to such an extent that the Bible accurately portrays them under the titles of “***The King of the North***” (the Seleucide division geographically north of Jerusalem) and “***The King of the South***” (the Ptolemies of Egypt, south of Jerusalem. This continues to verse 16.

(For a detailed step by step commentary on these verses, may I recommend the excellent book penned in the 1800s by Uriah Smith, *Daniel and the Revelation*.)

After this, the camera of prophetic interest shifts to the west.

## **Pagan Roman empire (vv.16-29)**

Dan.11:16 But he that cometh against him shall do according to his own will, and none shall stand before him: and he shall stand in the glorious land, which by his hand shall be consumed.

In 63 BC the Roman power interceded in a Jewish civil war and declared Judea a Roman protectorate.

Dan.11:17-19 He shall also set his face to enter with the strength of his whole kingdom, and upright ones with him; thus shall he do: and he shall give him the daughter of women, corrupting her: but she shall not stand on his side, neither be for him.

After this shall he turn his face unto the isles, and shall take many: but a prince for his own behalf shall cause the reproach offered by him to cease; without his own reproach he shall cause it to turn upon him.

Then he shall turn his face toward the fort of his own land: but he shall stumble and fall, and not be found.

There is a reference here to Julius Caesar and his conquest of Egypt. Later, he attempted to conquer the British Isles but failed

to penetrate more than 70 miles from the coast. He returned to Rome, where he was assassinated in 44 BC.

Dan.11:20 Then shall stand up in his estate a **raiser of taxes** in the glory of the kingdom: but within few days he shall be destroyed, neither in anger, nor in battle.

This foretold the reign of Caesar Augustus, who, at the time of Jesus Christ's birth, decreed that "*the entire world should be taxed*" (Luke 2:1).

Dan.11:21 And in his estate shall stand up a vile person, to whom they shall not give the honour of the kingdom: but he shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries.

Unlike many Roman emperors, Augustus died at age 76, peacefully, in his sleep. Unlike many who attained the throne by assassinating the reigning emperor, Tiberius succeeded Augustus through flatteries.

Dan.11:22 And with the arms of a flood shall they be overflowed from before him, and shall be broken; yea, also the **prince of the covenant**.

It was in AD 31, during the reign of Tiberius, that Jesus Christ was sacrificed on a cross for the sins of the world.

In the Old Testament prophecies, the coming Messiah was termed the "*the messenger of the covenant*" (Malachi 3:1) and the prince of the covenant ("*Messiah the Prince*" who "**shall confirm the covenant**" (Daniel 9:25-27)

This is the everlasting covenant of mercy (the promise of rescue) that the Creator had made with the human family, the promise that he had given to our first parents after they had broken the universal law.

So it was that just before his death, Jesus lifted a cup of wine and said to his disciples, “*This represents **my blood of the covenant**, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins.*” (Matthew 26:28)

To become effective, the covenant would require his death.

Dan.11:23-29      And after the league made with him he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people.

He shall enter peaceably even upon the fattest places of the province; and he shall do that which his fathers have not done, nor his fathers' fathers; he shall scatter among them the prey, and spoil, and riches: yea, and he shall forecast his devices against the strong holds, even for a time.

And he shall stir up his power and his courage against the king of the south with a great army; and the king of the south shall be stirred up to battle with a very great and mighty army; but he shall not stand: for they shall forecast devices against him.

Yea, they that feed of the portion of his meat shall destroy him, and his army shall overflow: and many shall fall down slain.

And both of these kings' hearts shall be to do mischief, and they shall speak lies at one table; but it shall not prosper: for yet the end shall be at the time appointed.

Then shall he return into his land with great riches; and his heart shall be against the holy covenant; and he shall do exploits, and return to his own land.

At the time appointed he shall return, and come toward the south; but it shall not be as the former, or as the latter.

All of these details in the prophecy were literally fulfilled, but it is not within the scope of this present work to go into the details. I again refer the reader to the excellent detailed historical commentary, Uriah Smith's *Daniel and the Revelation*.

Daniel chapter 11, from verses 1 to 29, brings us through the same history as Daniel chapters 2, 7, and 8, but when we come to verse 30 and onward, we pass from seeing governments as governments, to **a power which is swaying these governments**. This power is:

### **Papal Rome (vv.30-35)**

Dan.11:30 He shall ...have indignation against the holy covenant: so shall he do; he shall... have **intelligence with them that forsake the holy covenant**.

The holy covenant is the pure gospel of Jesus Christ (see the explanation which follows verse 22 of this present chapter).

The Bible indicates that the "*sanctuary*" is in heaven itself, where Jesus, now ascended, carries on His high priestly ministry daily, without ceasing, and representing before God all who have renounced their sinful ways and now follow Him. (Hebrews chapter 9)

Dan.11:31 · And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall **pollute the sanctuary** of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place **the abomination that maketh desolate**.

The Roman Papacy had the *arms* (armies) of its subject nations at its disposal, to enforce its religious policies upon the nations.

"*The abomination that maketh desolate*" refers here to the Church of Rome, as will be easily seen by comparison with other Bible references.

"*Pollute the sanctuary*" parallels the prophecy of Daniel 8:10-12 where it is prophesied that the Roman Vatican power will "*cast the truth of the sanctuary to the ground*" by elevating itself as a substitute sanctuary system of earthly priests that claims to "hold the power of life or death", and to which men are told to confess instead of confessing to Jesus in heaven.

Dan.11:32 And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries: but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits.

Dan.11:33 And they that understand among the people shall instruct many: **yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, many days.**

The methods employed by the Roman Catholic Papacy to persecute “heretics” are outlined here, namely, the sword, burning at the stake, imprisonment, and confiscation of assets. Yet many, with an understanding of Bible truth, went out bravely, sharing their saving knowledge with those who were in spiritual darkness.

Dan.11:34-35 Now when they shall fall, they shall be holpen with a little help: but many shall cleave to them with flatteries. And some of them of understanding shall fall, to try them, and to purge, and to make them white, even to the time of the end: because it is yet for a time appointed.

Helpful relief came to the preservers of the banned Bible came in the form of the Protestant Reformation. Yet many of these were condemned to death by the religious courts.

**Papal Rome continues,  
but from now on it is  
behind the scenes through  
other world powers (vv.36-45)**

From this point on, history deals with Papal Rome's workings through the various governments. The "literal" movements of these nations are portrayed in verses 36 to 45, but the student of

prophecy who has true spiritual discernment will see the movements of the Roman Papacy behind the scenes that are being literally portrayed.

From this point to the end of the chapter, we perceive the outworking of Vatican policy, first in France, and finally in Islam, the rebellious child of Rome. (The next chapter of this present work, which deals with Islam, will explain that last statement.)

The description of the Roman Vatican power in this passage parallels closely the descriptions of the “little horn” in Daniel chapter 7 and the “little horn” in Daniel chapter 8.

In verse 36 the focus shifts to the **outworking of the Papal policy in France**. The Papacy was responsible for what happened in France during the French Revolution Reign of terror, as portrayed in Revelation chapter 11 and Daniel 11:36-39. This was done as an experiment to try to destroy Protestantism and the Bible, and will be repeated in the closing scenes of history, as mentioned in Revelation chapter 13.

It is worth noting that **mention of the "king of the north"** (occupying the territory north of Jerusalem) **ceases at verse 15**. The camera of prophetic interest shifts to the west. **But the "king of the north" springs into action again from verse 40 onward.**

At the time of the end (from 1798), the "king of the north" and "king of the south" come back into the picture. The events predicted were fulfilled literally.

**The Papacy is controlling the movements behind the scenes**, because she believes that out of it all she will end up with Jerusalem as her capital and reign over the world from there.

In 639 AD Jerusalem fell to Islam and in 691 AD the famous

Dome of the Rock, the second holiest in the Muslim world, was completed. In the tenth century the Crusaders captured Jerusalem, but a century later the Arabs re-took it.

Since then, world events have moved forward. The State of Israel now occupies Jerusalem. Edom, Moab and Ammon (modern Jordan) are Muslim. The "*king of the south*" (Egypt) has been swallowed up by the Muslim Brotherhood whose aim is a global Caliphate. Islam covers all of the Middle East including the Libyans and a large section of Ethiopia.

The only verse that has not been fulfilled is verse 45.

### **Can events be delayed?**

Early last century, it looked as though verse 45 was about to be fulfilled, and then world events backed off. But it may be asked, in a gradually fulfilling prophecy, is it realistic that **the next successive event** could really be delayed so long?

I believe we have answer in the Bible itself.

Firstly, we might note the history of ancient Israel's entry into the Promised Land. God was ready to let them go in - but they demonstrated a spirit of rebellious unbelief, so God turned them back into the wilderness to wander 40 years until that generation had died off. Then it was their children who went in.

Secondly, Revelation 7 tells us that as the final time of trouble is about to burst upon the world, a restraining hand will then be placed over the situation, because God's people are not yet ready. So the "four winds" of trouble are held back a little longer. The instruction given to the angels who are watching over the events, is to

*"...hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads."  
(Revelation 7:3-4)*

Nevertheless, God's word of prophecy is certain of fulfilment. This principle is expressed in the book of Habakkuk:

*"And the LORD answered me, and said, Write the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that he may run that readeth it. For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: **though it tarry, wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry.**"  
(Habakkuk 2:2-3)*

Everything was poised and ready to happen, but many of God's true people were not yet ready to face the final events. Hence the delay. But though the prophecy appears to tarry, it will surely come.

## **How does Islam fit?**

**QUESTION:** According to the four parallel prophecies of Daniel 2 and 7 and 8-9 and 11, isn't **Rome** the power that *continues until the return of Jesus? So why introduce Islam?*

**ANSWER:** In the **Daniel 2** prophecy, the iron of the fourth power, **Rome**, continues on into the feet and toes of the prophecy, right until the end. But with that **iron** there **ALSO** now appears **clay**, which does not mix with the iron. So *here is introduced a new element.* (See Ch. 16 of this present book.)

So some people may be asking, are the toes a combination of Romish and Islamic? We certainly have both in the world today and, while they are connected at the top, their adherents don't mix any more than do iron and clay. But the prophecy in Daniel 2 does not describe any of this except to say that the kingdom is

divided and cannot unite. It then goes straight to the Second Coming.

The second line of prophecy is found in **Daniel 7**. In this prophecy we see four beasts representing the same four kingdoms of the first prophecy, but much more detail is given about the breakup of the Roman empire. This prophecy takes us down to and describes the establishment of the **Roman** papacy and its activities leading on to the Second Coming. (See Chapter 17 of this present book.)

The third line of prophecy is in **Daniel 8**. It talks about the ram and the goat, representing Medo-Persia and Greece, then the little horn that exceeds them in greatness, **Rome**, both political then religious. By this time Babylon had already passed off the scene of action and was no longer a player. This prophecy covers the same ground as the other two but adds some additional information, which carries us down to the end of the 2,300 days and the cleansing of the sanctuary in 1844 leading to the Second Coming. (Chapters 18 and 19 of this present book.)

The fourth line of prophecy is found in **Daniel 11** and covers the same ground as the other three. Beginning with Medo-Persia, it gives us a detailed view of world history through Greece, then **Rome** (in both its pagan, then papal, phases, as well as its maneuverings **in the open and ALSO behind the scenes**) until the Second Coming. It adds some additional information about the world, just as each of the preceding prophecies have added additional material.

We see in all four of these prophecies a consistency and recurring theme which is in no way altered by introducing the Islamic power in verses 40-45 as *the king of the north*. In fact the **Islamic power** is far more **Roman** than most people ever suspect - and fulfilling Rome's agenda - as we shall discover in the succeeding chapters of this present work.

We now stand *close to the end* of this prophecy.

## **Importance of this region**

The location of Asiatic Turkey and its Islamic neighbors is of greater value than we may realise. Its importance can scarcely be over exaggerated, for it occupies undoubtedly the most important strategic position in the world. It forms the nucleus and center of the Old World. It separates, and at the same time connects, Europe, Asia, and Africa, three continents which are inhabited by approximately nine tenths of the human race.

## **Restoration of the Ottoman empire**

**The Muslim Brotherhood** is in the process of **resurrecting the Ottoman empire** and plans to establish its seat once again in Turkey. When their goal is accomplished, the exclusive religion of the empire will be Islam (Mohammedanism). Remember, in prophecy, when the Bible speaks of a kingdom, it is talking about the people who occupy that territory, not the territory itself.)

**The Ottoman empire** will once again occupy the eastern half of the ancient Roman empire, with **its seat in the territory of the original "king of the north"**. And since its religion (Islam) was secretly **created by the Papacy**, it is esoterically **a part of Papal Rome**. Therefore, just as the power that now sways the western division of the old pagan Roman empire is called Roman Catholic, the power that today dominates the **eastern division is also Roman!**

Rome includes the Papacy. It also includes Opus Dei and the Jesuits. And, as we shall discover in Chapters 24 and 25 of this present work, Rome and Islam are esoterically the same entity (a small group of elite insiders who hold the same knowledge or

interests). **Islam is a child of the Papacy, and therefore, Roman.**

The Papacy tries to control every move made by Islam. Although the Papacy created Islam to serve its own ambitions, Islam grew so large and powerful that it got out of control and became a monster. The Papacy is still struggling to bring this gigantic power back under control.

Here is an event soon to transpire:

v.45 And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace <b>between the seas in the glorious holy mountain.</b>
--

The "*glorious holy mountain*" is identified clearly in Daniel 9:16 - "***Jerusalem, thy holy mountain***". This is the physical city of Jerusalem, which stands "between the seas", the Dead Sea and the Mediterranean. According to this prophecy **Islam, "*the king of the north*"**, is soon to establish its seat of government in **Jerusalem.**

## 24

# WHY THE VATICAN CREATED ISLAM

Why did the pope kiss the *Koran*?



*Roman Catholic pope kissing the Muslim Koran*

Since the Muslim holy book *the Koran* teaches that Jesus did not die on the cross for our sins, and that He is not the divine Son of God, ***why did the pope kiss the Koran?*** For him to do that means that Catholicism is to accept its teachings.

Did he kiss it because as the head mason in the world who wears the ephod, the pope, along with the highest clergy in the Vatican, and the highest Islamic leaders - who are also high masons - know that ***they both share an explosive secret*** that their followers would tear them to pieces for, if they found out?



*Pope prays facing Mecca in mosque, Istanbul*

Yes, the pope and Muslims pray together facing Mecca, to the same god! How is this possible? As we shall now discover, history shows and Vatican insiders testify that it was the Vatican that established Islam.

The story begins with the Roman empire...

### **Rome's chief god was Satan – Lucifer**

The Roman empire worshipped Lucifer, the sun god - hence our name for the first day of the week, SUNday. As the empire collapsed in the 5<sup>th</sup> century AD, its place was taken by a political organisation with a religious front – the Roman Catholic Vatican.

Rome's powerful enemy was true Christianity – working by peace and love and not by force. Rome hated pure Christianity that Jesus had established.

This true Christianity was growing in the heartland of Asia Minor, all the way up to India, and into north of Africa. They all

kept God's Bible Sabbath. Only in Alexandria (in Egypt) and in Rome was the Bible Sabbath replaced with the day of Rome's sun god, Sunday.

Rome was able, by force of armies, to suppress true Christianity throughout Europe, but Africa and the Middle East were not so easy to conquer. So Rome looked for someone else to do it for her – someone who already lived in those other regions. They looked with hungry eyes at the Arab tribes.

### **The Vatican and Muhammad – the unbreakable link**

And this is where Muhammad enters the picture.

In 595 AD, at the age of 25, Mohammed married Khadija, 40 years old, whose cousin Waraquah was a Roman Catholic living in Mecca. She came from a Roman Catholic convent as a Catholic nun.

The Roman Catholic organization now got busy. Muhammad was chosen to do the job. Helpers began working with him.

Soon a Roman Catholic monk arrived to give some help in the writing of the Muslim holy book, *The Koran*. It extols Mary. That is why Islam has special regard for the Virgin Mary.

Islam was started by agents of Rome to attract the Arabs into it - away from true Christianity. The Roman Catholic Church started the religion of Islam (in an indirect way so the world wouldn't realize it) to take Arabs under their control.

Islam was meant to

- (a) *divert* people *from true Christianity* of the Bible
- (b) *eliminate biblical Christians and Jews* from North Africa and the Middle East, then

(3) hand over *Jerusalem to the Vatican*.

(This history was explained carefully by Roman Catholic Cardinal Bea to former Jesuit insider Dr Alberto Rivera and his fellow Jesuit students, and reported in detail, in Rivera's book, *The Prophet*, pp.11-31. His report appears in the next chapter of this present book.)

But, after a while, Islam got out of hand and refused to obey Rome. Among other things, after taking Jerusalem, the Muslims refused to give Jerusalem to the Vatican, as requested. They also wanted to vie for control of Eastern Europe. So ultimately the Crusades of the Middle Ages were launched, as commanded by Pope Urban II, to punish Islam.

**Now ask yourself about  
these matching details  
that unite Islam with Rome:**

These are fingerprints of the same organization:

### **1. MARY**

Catholicism loves and worships Mary. Islam does the same.

### **2. FATIMA**

Muhammad had a daughter called Fatima, who is highly regarded by *Muslims*. In Catholicism, they depict Mary as "Our Lady of Fatima, because Fatima in Portugal was named after Muhammad's daughter. By this means *Romanism* opens up a door of access to the Muslim heart.

The time will soon come that any "visions" of Mary favoring Rome's ideas will be highly regarded.

### 3. RELIC WORSHIP

Roman Catholicism worships relics. So does Islam.

### 4. IN A CAVE

By using Fatima, Rome has an entering wedge in the door of the Islamic heart. Mary appears in a cave. In Fatima she's in the cave. In Lourdes she's in the cave. The pope is always visiting the cave and worshipping in the cave. Rome's Jesuit founder Ignatius Loyola received his instruction *in a cave*.

Muhammad received his instruction *in a cave*.

### 5. PILGRIMAGES

*Roman Catholicism* propagates pilgrimages and *Islam* propagates pilgrimages. Millions go on these pilgrimages.

### 6. RELIGIOUS SYMBOLS

The fact that the Roman Catholic Vatican started the religion of Islam, is the reason why numerous religious symbols of *Islam* are those of the *Roman Catholic* Church. (Walter J. Veith, *The Islamic Connection*, DVD)

### 7. STAR AND HALF-MOON SYMBOL

For example, the symbol of *Islam* is the moon and star.

The sun inside of the crescent moon represents male and female. This is seen in pagan Egyptian pictures as well in Assyria, Mesopotamia, and Babylon. The Roman Catholic papacy has the *same thing* because the pope is the successor and representative of the Babylonian religion.

When a *Roman Catholic* priest says the Mass, he has a round

wafer disc - a symbol of Baal - the sun god - and after the Mass, it is placed in the "monstrance" which is a half-moon.

The symbol of the *sun in a half moon* is seen in both Roman Catholic churches and in the Islamic world - as you see in the following picture of a stained glass window in the Catholic Cathedral. The *star of Islam* is also seen *in both the Islamic mosques and in Roman Catholic cathedrals*.



## 8. SUN SYMBOL

On the outside of the *Catholic Cathedral* we have the symbol of the sun. And on the outside of the *Islamic Cathedral* across the street, we also have the symbol of the sun. It's the same symbolism because at the top, it's the same religion.

## 9. DRESS THE SAME

We also see that orthodox *Islamic* women and *Roman Catholic* nuns dress the same.

## 10. JOHN THE BAPTIST RELIC

The *Roman Catholic* church has "the arm of John the Baptist".

In Antioch, the *Islamic* mosque has "the head of John the Baptist".

## 11. SIDE BY SIDE

In all the Islamic countries, *Roman Catholic cathedrals* and *Islamic mosques* often stand side-by-side. It's not a coincidence. Ask yourself **why is this?**



Also, in certain *Islam* countries, Roman Catholicism is the only officially recognized (so-called) “Christian” religion. Although in these Muslim countries you can be killed for becoming a Christian, you can *avoid persecution* if you become a *Roman Catholic*.

In World War I the genocides in the Ottoman empire did not include the Roman Catholics.

How often do you hear about Muslims attacking and blowing up Catholic churches? It is true, some extremists do go after the Pope and Catholics, but the two systems are really almost identical and connected at the top.

And when the US invaded the Middle East, who cautioned against crushing Islam? The pope.

## 12. PRAY WITH BEADS

In *Roman Catholic* cathedrals they pray with beads - the rosary.

And in *Islamic* cathedrals and shrines, they pray with beads.

## 13. THE ALL-SEEING EYE SYMBOL

The all-seeing eye is seen all through the *Islamic* countries. You will not see a taxi cab in those countries without the all-seeing eye on it.

*Roman Catholicism* also has the all-seeing eye in their cathedrals and in their worship.

## 14. INNER CIRCLE AND OUTER CIRCLE

### High-up initiates have the same religion

In Freemasonry, when you get to the 33rd degree, the *Koran* replaces the Bible as the holy book. When you get to the top of Freemasonry, you find the black pope, the man who really runs the Vatican. Could the two religions really be one and the same?

The Roman Catholic Knights Templars had two aspects of their religion. The one aspect was for the goyim, = the catechumen. Those two words mean "human cattle".

That first aspect is the religious "window-front" cover for the world, known as "Catholicism." (See the book *Morals and Dogma* -the masonic "bible") So the outside world got Catholicism.

The second aspect is the inner, esoteric circle. They have the worship of Lucifer.

The exact same thing is in both *the Islamic* faith as well as *in the Roman Catholic* faith. In both, there is *an inner circle, and*

*an outer circle*. The outer circle of the masses gets goyim religion. The inner circle of the elite gets Lucifer worship.

This may shock you, but, in that inner circle, *the highest Vatican clergy* as well as *the highest Islamic clergy* at the top, are masons who worship *the same* god - Lucifer.

Top Roman Catholic and top Islamic insiders in masonry - of which the pope is the head – know that, according to *the highest levels of masonry*, “Alla” is the same as “Set”, or Satan. (See Prof. Walter Veith’s DVD, *The Islamic Connection*.) Osama bin Laden was a 33rd degree mason. Through masonry, Rome controls the leaders and religions of the world.

The leaders of both Islam and Rome, in the inner court, worship the same Lucifer, and are thus the “initiates” of the same religion – both of them.

Controlling both of them is a central organization seated in Rome. Rome is the mother; Islam is one of the daughters.

The masses in the outer court know nothing about this. The masses are beautiful people for whom Jesus died - who are kept in ignorance of what the inner circle is doing.

The highest leaders of both Islam and Rome know it, but the masses do not know it. And the Roman Catholic leaders know something that even the head Islamic leaders may not know (except the ones who are Jesuits and papal agents in disguise) - that Islam is being used *to help Catholicism regain control of the world*.

## **15. THE SO-CALLED "SEAT OF ST. PETER"**

*“...The sacrilegious curiosity of the French at the time when they occupied Rome, in the beginning of this century, overcame all obstacles, in order to see so famous a seat [the "seat of St.*

*Peter"] They took off its copper covering, and drew out the seat, and examining it diligently, found there engraved in Arabic characters these words:—‘There is one God, and **Mahomet is His prophet.**’” (Popery, Puseyism, and Jesuitism, Luigi Descanctis, translated from the Italian by Maria Betts in 1905.)*

## **Rome’s plan to use Islam**

In these last days even the top leadership of Islam has been infiltrated by the Roman Catholic Jesuits - to be used as a tool to help destroy true Christianity and help the Vatican “Mother Church” do what the Bible prophet John revealed that she would work for - to “regain control of the world.”

Islam is infiltrating nations around the world, while Rome’s Jesuits are infiltrating Islam – so that ultimately the entire Islamic world will be moved by Rome’s agents to help the Vatican’s plan for world domination.

In the next chapter you will discover a Vatican insider's first hand report.

# 25

## AN INSIDER'S CONFESSION

### HOW THE VATICAN CREATED ISLAM

This astonishing information came from a former Jesuit Roman Catholic priest, Alberto Rivera, which was told to him by Cardinal Bea while he was at the Vatican.

He revealed it after his conversion to Protestant Christianity. It is excerpted from *The Prophet*, published by Chick Publications, PO Box 661, Chino CA 91708. Since its publication, after several unsuccessful attempts on his life, he died suddenly from food poisoning. But his testimony should not be silenced. Dr. Rivera speaks to us still ...

"What I'm going to tell you is what *I learned in secret briefings in the Vatican* when I was a Jesuit priest, under oath and induction. A Jesuit cardinal named Augustine Bea showed us how desperately the Roman Catholics *wanted Jerusalem* at the end of the third century. Because of its religious history and its strategic location, the Holy City was considered a priceless treasure. A scheme had to be developed to make Jerusalem a Roman Catholic city.

"The great untapped source of manpower that could do this job was the children of Ishmael. The poor Arabs fell victim to one of the most clever plans ever devised by the powers of darkness."

Early Christians went everywhere with the gospel setting up small churches, but they met heavy opposition. Both the Jews and the Roman government persecuted the believers in Christ to

stop their spread. But the Jews rebelled against Rome, and in 70 AD, Roman armies under General Titus smashed Jerusalem and destroyed the great Jewish temple which was the heart of Jewish worship...in fulfillment of Christ's prophecy in Matthew 24:2.

"On this holy place today where the temple once stood, the Dome of the Rock Mosque stands as Islam's second most holy place. Sweeping changes were in the wind. Corruption, apathy, greed, cruelty, perversion and rebellion were eating at the Roman Empire, and it was ready to collapse. The persecution against Christians was useless as they continued to lay down their lives for the gospel of Christ.

"The only way Satan could stop this thrust was to create a counterfeit 'Christian' religion to destroy the work of God. The solution was in Rome. Their religion had come from ancient Babylon and all it needed was a face-lift. This didn't happen overnight, but began in the writings of the 'early church fathers'.

"It was through their writings that a new religion would take shape. The statue of Jupiter in Rome was eventually called St. Peter, and the statue of Venus was changed to the Virgin Mary.

"The site chosen for its headquarters was on one of the seven hills called 'Vaticanus', the place of the divining serpent where the Satanic temple of Janus stood.

"The great counterfeit religion was Roman Catholicism, called *'Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth'* - Revelation 17:5. She ***was raised up to block the gospel***, slaughter the believers in Christ, establish religions, create wars and make the nations drunk with the wine of her fornication as we will see.

"Three major religions have one thing in common - each has a holy place where they look for guidance. Roman Catholicism looks to the Vatican as the Holy City. The Jews look to the

wailing wall in Jerusalem, and the Muslims look to Mecca as their Holy City. Each group believes that they receive certain types of blessings for the rest of their lives for visiting their holy place. In the beginning, Arab visitors would bring gifts to the 'House of God', and the keepers of the Kaaba were gracious to all who came. Some brought their idols and, not wanting to offend these people, their idols were placed inside the sanctuary. It is said that the Jews looked upon the Kaaba as an outlying tabernacle of the Lord with veneration until it became polluted with idols.

"In a tribal contention over a well (Zamzam) the treasure of the Kaaba and the offerings that pilgrims had given were dumped down the well and it was filled with sand - it disappeared.

"Many years later Adb Al-Muttalib was given visions telling him where to find the well and its treasure. He became the hero of Mecca, and he was destined to become the grandfather of Muhammad. Before this time, Augustine became the bishop of North Africa and was effective in winning Arabs to Roman Catholicism, including whole tribes. It was among these Arab converts to Catholicism that the concept of looking for an Arab prophet developed.

"Muhammad's father died from illness and sons born to great Arab families in places like Mecca were sent into the desert to be suckled and weaned and spend some of their childhood with Bedouin tribes for training and to avoid the plagues in the cities.

"After his mother and grandfather also died, Muhammad was with his uncle when a Roman Catholic monk learned of his identity and said, "Take your brother's son back to his country and guard him against the Jews, for by god, if they see him and know of him that which I know, they will construe evil against him. Great things are in store for this brother's son of yours.

"The Roman Catholic monk had fanned the flames for future Jewish persecutions at the hands of the followers of Muhammad. The Vatican desperately wanted Jerusalem because of its religious significance, but was blocked by the Jews.

"Another problem was the true Christians in North Africa who preached the gospel. Roman Catholicism was growing in power, but would not tolerate opposition. Somehow the Vatican had to create a weapon to eliminate both the Jews and the true Christian believers who refused to accept Roman Catholicism.

"Looking to North Africa, they saw the multitudes of Arabs as a source of manpower to do their dirty work. Some Arabs had become Roman Catholic, and could be used in reporting information to leaders in Rome. Others were used in an underground spy network to carry out Rome's master plan to control the great multitudes of Arabs who rejected Catholicism.

"When 'St Augustine' appeared on the scene, he knew what was going on. His monasteries served as bases to seek out and destroy Bible manuscripts owned by the true Christians.

"The Vatican *wanted to create a messiah for the Arabs*, someone they could raise up as a great leader, a man with charisma whom they could train, and eventually unite all the non-Catholic Arabs behind him, creating *a mighty army that would ultimately capture Jerusalem for the pope*.

"In the Vatican briefing, Cardinal Bea told us this story:

"A wealthy Arabian lady who was a faithful follower of the pope played a tremendous part in this drama. She was a widow named Khadijah. She gave her wealth to the church and retired to a convent, but was given an assignment. She was to find a brilliant young man who could be used by the Vatican to create

a new religion and become the messiah for the children of Ishmael.

Khadijah had a cousin named Waraquah, who was also a very faithful Roman Catholic and the Vatican placed him in a critical role as Muhammad's advisor. He had tremendous influence on Muhammad.

"Teachers were sent to young Muhammad and he had intensive training. Muhammad studied the works of St. Augustine which prepared him for his 'great calling.' The Vatican had Catholic Arabs across North Africa spread the story of a great one who was about to rise up among the people and be the chosen one of their God.

"While Muhammad was being prepared, he was told that his enemies were the Jews and that the only true Christians were Roman Catholic. He was taught that others calling themselves Christians were actually wicked impostors and should be destroyed. Many Muslims believe this.

"Muhammad began receiving 'divine revelations' and his wife's Catholic cousin Waraquah helped interpret them. From this came the *Koran*. In the fifth year of Muhammad's mission, persecution came against his followers because they refused to worship the idols in the Kaaba.

"Muhammad instructed some of them to flee to Abyssinia where Negus, the Roman Catholic king accepted them because Muhammad's views on the virgin Mary were so close to Roman Catholic doctrine. These Muslims received protection from Catholic kings because of Muhammad's revelations.

"Muhammad later conquered Mecca and the Kaaba was cleared of idols. History proves that before Islam came into existence, the Sabeans in Arabia worshiped the moon-god who was married to the sun-god. They gave birth to three goddesses who

were worshipped throughout the Arab world as 'Daughters of Allah' An idol excavated at Hazor in Palestine in 1950's shows Allah sitting on a throne with the crescent moon on his chest.

"Muhammad claimed he had a vision from Allah and was told, 'You are the messenger of Allah.' This began his career as a prophet and he received many messages. By the time Muhammad died, the religion of Islam was exploding. The nomadic Arab tribes were joining forces in the name of Allah and his prophet, Muhammad.

"Some of Muhammad's writings were placed in the *Koran*, others were never published. They are now in the hands of high ranking holy men (Ayatollahs) in the Islamic faith.

"When Cardinal Bea shared with us in the Vatican, he said, these writings are guarded because they contain information that links the Vatican to the creation of Islam. ***Both sides have so much information on each other***, that if exposed, it could create such a scandal that it would be a disaster for both religions.

"In their 'holy' book, the *Koran*, Christ is regarded as only a prophet. If the pope was His representative on earth, then he also must be a prophet of God. This caused the followers of Muhammad to fear and respect the pope as another "holy man."

"The pope moved quickly and issued bulls granting the Arab generals permission to invade and conquer the nations of North Africa. The Vatican helped to finance the building of these massive Islamic armies in exchange for three favors:

- "1. Eliminate the Jews and Christians (true believers, which they called infidels).
2. Protect the Augustinian Monks and Roman Catholics.
3. Conquer Jerusalem for "His Holiness" in the Vatican.

"As time went by, the power of Islam became tremendous - Jews and true Christians were slaughtered, and Jerusalem fell into their hands. Roman Catholics were never attacked, nor were their shrines, during this time. But when the pope asked for Jerusalem, he was surprised at their denial! The Arab generals had such military success that they could not be intimidated by the pope - nothing could stand in the way of their own plan.

"Under Waraquah's direction, Muhammad wrote that Abraham offered Ishmael as a sacrifice.

“The Bible says that Isaac was the sacrifice, but Muhammad removed Isaac's name and inserted Ishmael's name. As a result of this and Muhammad's vision, the faithful Muslims built a mosque, the Dome of the Rock, in Ishmael's honor on the site of the Jewish temple that was destroyed in 70 AD. This made Jerusalem the 2nd most holy place in the Islam faith. How could they give such a sacred shrine to the pope without causing a revolt?

"The pope realized what they had created was out of control when he heard they were calling ‘His Holiness’ an infidel. The Muslim generals were determined to conquer the world for Allah and now they turned toward Europe. Islamic ambassadors approached the pope and asked for papal bulls to give them permission to invade European countries.

"The Vatican was outraged; war was inevitable. Temporal power and control of the world was considered the basic right of the pope. He wouldn't think of sharing it with those whom he considered heathens.

"The pope raised up his armies and called them crusades to hold back the children of Ishmael from grabbing Catholic Europe. The crusades lasted centuries and Jerusalem slipped out of the pope's hands.

"Turkey fell and Spain and Portugal were invaded by Islamic forces. In Portugal, they called a mountain village 'Fatima' in honor of Muhammad's daughter, never dreaming it would become world famous.

"Years later when the Muslim armies were poised on the islands of Sardinia and Corsica, to invade Italy, there was a serious problem. The Islamic generals realized they were too far extended. It was time for peace talks. One of the negotiators was Francis of Assisi.

"As a result, the Muslims were allowed to occupy Turkey in a 'Christian' world, and the Catholics were allowed to occupy Lebanon in the Arab world. It was also agreed that the Muslims could build mosques in Catholic countries without interference as long as Roman Catholicism could flourish in Arab countries.

"Cardinal Bea told us in Vatican briefings that both the Muslims and Roman Catholics agreed to block and destroy the efforts of their common enemy, Bible-believing Christian missionaries.

“Through these concordats, Satan blocked the children of Ishmael from a knowledge of Scripture and the truth.

"A tight control was kept on Muslims from the Ayatollah down through the Islamic priests, nuns and monks. The Vatican also engineered a campaign of hatred between the Muslim Arabs and the Jews. Before this, they had co-existed peacefully.

"The Islamic community looks on the Bible-believing missionary as a devil who brings poison to the children of Allah. This explains years of ministry in those countries with little results.

"The next plan was to control Islam. In 1910, Portugal was going Socialistic. Red flags were appearing and the Catholic

Church was facing a major problem. Increasing numbers were against the church.

"The Jesuits wanted Russia involved, and the location of this vision at Fatima could play a key part in pulling Islam to the Mother Church.

"In 1917, [a fake] Virgin [apparition] appeared in Fatima. 'The Mother of God' was a smashing success, playing to overflow crowds. As a result, the Socialists of Portugal suffered a major defeat.

"Roman Catholics world-wide began praying for the conversion of Russia and the Jesuits invented the Novenas to Fatima which they could perform throughout North Africa, spreading good public relations to the Muslim world. The Arabs thought they were honoring the daughter of Muhammad, which is what the Jesuits wanted them to believe.

"As a result of the vision of Fatima, Pope Pius XII ordered his Nazi army to crush Russia and the Orthodox religion and 'make Russia Roman Catholic.' A few years after he lost World War II, Pope Pius XII startled the world with his phoney dancing sun vision to keep Fatima in the news. It was great religious show biz and the world swallowed it.

"Not surprisingly, Pope Pius was the only one to see this vision. As a result, a group of followers has grown into a Blue Army world-wide, totaling millions of faithful Roman Catholics ready to die for the blessed virgin.

"But we haven't seen anything yet. The Jesuits have their Virgin Mary scheduled to appear four or five times in China, Russia, and major appearance in the U.S.

"What has this got to do with Islam? Note Bishop Sheen's statement some years ago: 'Our Lady's appearances at Fatima

marked the turning point in the history of the world's 350 million Muslims. After the death of his daughter, Muhammad wrote that Fatima 'is the most holy of all women in Paradise, next to Mary.'

"Bishop Sheen pointed out that the pilgrim virgin statues of Our Lady of Fatima were enthusiastically received by Muslims in Africa, India, and elsewhere, and that many Muslims are now coming into the Roman Catholic Church." ([http://www.cloakanddagger.de/lenny/alberto\\_rivera.htm](http://www.cloakanddagger.de/lenny/alberto_rivera.htm))

May I encourage you also to watch this video which is in three parts. It reveals further how Rome created Islam as a tool to help destroy biblical Christianity.

"Did the Vatican create Islam?"

Part 1

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=E7uuXKe5sxI>

Part 2

[http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=D009Ir\\_Spk&feature=relmfu](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=D009Ir_Spk&feature=relmfu)

Part 3 <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5ORUYWxgywc&feature=relmfu>

You may also find it helpful to watch the Islamic Connection video by Dr Walter Veith:

<http://amazingdiscoveries.tv/media/129/216-the-islamic-connection/>

## **Vatican wants Jerusalem**

The recapture of Jerusalem has burned as a fervent desire in Vatican hearts since the days of the Crusades.

As journalist Joel Bainerman, a well-known commentator on Israeli affairs, pointed out,

*"The end goal of the Vatican is to seize control of the Old City of Jerusalem out of the clutches of Israel."*

([www.joelbainerman.com](http://www.joelbainerman.com))

Its ultimate goal is to transfer its headquarters from Rome to Jerusalem.

## 26

# ISLAM AND THE FIRST WOE

Is Islam in Bible prophecy? Is Mohammed, the prophet from the desert, mentioned in the prophetic books?

As we saw in Chapter 6, the children of the east have been involved in much of the history of the Bible. So we do not find it strange that they are also in the book of Revelation, which covers the closing scenes of earth's history. We see that, yes, both Islam and the desert prophet are mentioned in Revelation's chapter 9.

The children of the east perform very key roles in God's ordering of human history; they play an influential role in world events in these final hours.

Chapter 9 in the Bible's book of Revelation actually begins with the closing verse from Revelation 8. An angel cries "Woe!" three times to the "inhabiters of the earth" because of events that were to transpire

"And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, *Woe, woe, woe*, to the inhabiters of the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are yet to sound!"  
Revelation 8:13

The *three “woe trumpets”* are the last three in a series of seven trumpets (seven prophecies). These are seven segments of time from the era of Jesus to the end of the world and of His Second Coming.

Revelation 9 covers certain Divinely-guided events during the time periods which announce the first and second woes.

## **Children of the east and the First Woe**

The First Woe time era spans from 622 AD - the flight of Mohammed to Medina - to the fall of Constantinople on July 27, 1449 AD.

Revelation 9:1 And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw *a star* fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the *bottomless pit*.

The application of the prophecy in Revelation 9 is too plain to miss. For many years the students of Scripture have seen that the “*star*” of Revelation 9:1 is indeed Muhammed. To Muhammed was given the “key” to unlock the “bottomless pit,” or the “*empty quarter*” of *Arabia* and the deserts of North Africa.

Here we see a *fallen star*. Stars in Bible prophecy are messengers (Rev 1: 20; Dan 8:10 and 12:3). So Rev 9:1 introduces us to *a fallen or false messenger*. This, as you will see, is the prophet of Islam, Muhammed.

*Bottomless pit* here can mean *the dark and evil side of the world or any desolate area*, and Islam came upon the world from the desert lands of North Africa. The bottomless pit

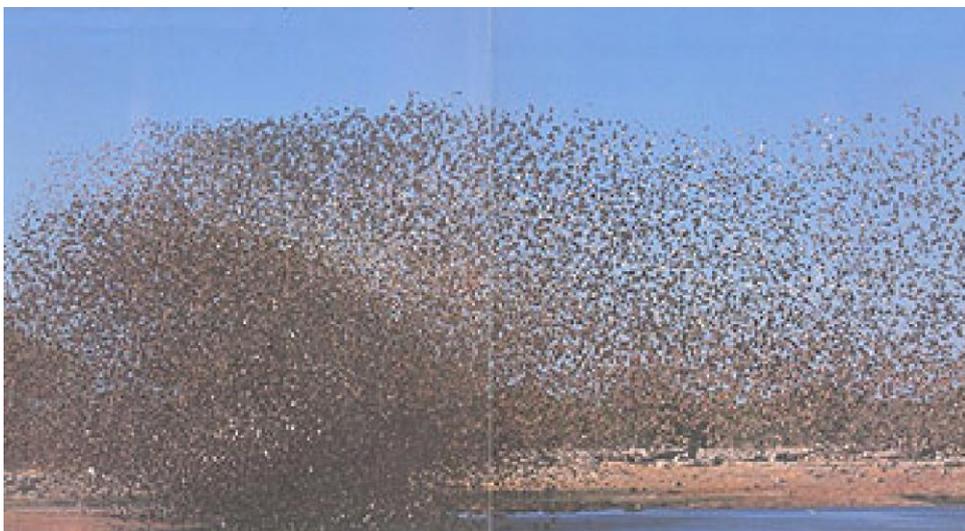
(abyss), many scholars believe, is a term describing *the arsenal or stronghold of Satan*. Any power emerging from the abyss is inspired by Satan.

In Revelation, powers inspired of God are represented as "coming from above", but powers inspired by Satan are represented as "coming from beneath", from the sea, from the earth, from the abyss. (Rev 10:8; 14:6,8,9; 13:1,11; 17:9; James 3:15-17)

Rev.9:2 And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a *smoke* out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by the smoke of the pit.

This leader, Muhammed, has *the key to the desert area*. The key represents power or authority - the ability to unlock, to free, or release, and he releases *smoke* that darkens the sun and air.

A famous traveller named Niebuhr in his journeys through Arabia described the appearance of the *swarms of locusts*, "*The swarms of these insects darken the air and appear at a distance like clouds of smoke.*" (Niebuhr Travels Vol. II. p 337)



***The sun here represents Christ, the Sun of Righteousness*** (Malachi 4:2). Thus Muhammed releases falsehood and error that would darken the light of the gospel - that would obscure Christ the Light of the world.

Rev.9:3 And there came out of the smoke, ***locusts*** upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the ***scorpions*** of the earth have power.

The historian Edward Gibbon wrote: "*The inhabitants of Syria have remarked that **locusts** come constantly from the desert of Arabia.*" (C. Volney *Voyage en Egypte et en Syrie*, Chap.XX Sect. 5)

Out from the bottomless pit came the "locusts" in great numbers. From earlier in our study, we found that ***the locusts represent the children of the east*** - the Arabs.

The Bible says of the Midianite Arabs:

Judges 6:5 - "*They came as grasshoppers [Hebrew: **locusts**] for **multitude**.*"



Judges 7:12 - *Midianites and the Amalekites [Arab tribes]... lay along the valley like grasshoppers [Hebrew: **locusts**]...*"

Nahum 3:15 - "Make thyself *many as the locusts.*"

In the Bible the locust denotes *swarming numbers*. What a fit symbol of the swarming numbers of Arab warriors!

Says an historian: "*The barbed Arabs, swift as **locusts**, and armed like **scorpions**, were ever ready to dart away in a moment.*"

So these two desert creatures closely resemble the Islamic armies of the Arabian desert; the *locusts* (that would come out of the deserts at certain times and destroy the crops) and the *scorpion*, (a feared and poisonous creature) that would strike with the sting in his tail inflicting agonising pain.

In the present prophecy, they appear *not as mere locusts*. These locusts appear (according to verse 7) "*as horses prepared for battle.*"



Proverbs 30:27 - "*The locusts have **no king**, yet go they forth all of them by bands.*"

Likewise, for about 600 years the Arabs were like locusts without a king. They had ***no central government*** for centuries.

We shall soon see that they were given a command by God. They were to be His instruments, both for protection of God's people and for chastisement of those who had turned away from God. Now let's take note upon whom the woe was to fall, and who was to be spared.

So Islam emerged to attack the corrupt forces of Rome suddenly and destructively.

Rev.9:4 And it was commanded them that they should ***not hurt*** the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither ***any tree***; but ***only those men which have NOT the seal of God*** in their

During the time of Muhammed and shortly thereafter were men who loved God and were following Him to the best of their knowledge. The command given to the "locust horses" was not to "hurt" them.

After the death of Muhammed, he was succeeded in the command by Abubeker, A. D. 632; who, as soon as he was firmly in power, sent a circular letter to the Arabian tribes, of which the following is an extract. Notice almost the same wording used by Abubeker:

***"Destroy no palm trees, nor burn any field of corn. Cut down no fruit trees, nor do any mischief to cattle, only such as you kill to eat..."***

*"As you go on, you will find some religious persons, who live retired in monasteries, and propose to themselves to serve God that way: let them alone and neither kill them nor destroy their monasteries. And you will find another sort of people that belong to the synagogue of Satan, who have shaven crowns; be sure you cleave their skulls, and give them no quarter, till they either turn Mahometans or pay tribute'."* (Edward Gibbon *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, Vol.V:489-490)

The **Roman Catholic monks** shaved their heads in a circle shape of the sun when they were ordained priests. This circular tonsure was a sign of the **pagan sun god**.



Islam from the beginning made a clear distinction between different groups of Christians, a fact that is confirmed by the *Koran*.

*"Not all of them are alike: Of the People of the Book [Christians] are a portion that stand (For the right): They rehearse the Signs of Allah all night long, and they prostrate themselves in adoration. They believe in Allah and the Last Day; they enjoin what is right, and forbid what is wrong; and they hasten (in emulation) in (all) good works: They are in the ranks of the righteous."* (Sura 3.113-114 Al-E-Imran)

The *Koran* clearly makes the testimony that not all professing Christians are true Christians. It gives an amazing insight about Christians, that only those who follow God's signs, forbidding what is wrong and doing what is right, are classed among the "righteous"!

One major "sign" of Allah that the faithful portion would practise is that they would honour and keep His Holy Sabbath of rest on Saturday, according to God's law.

Exodus 31:13 - "...*Verily my sabbaths ye shall keep: for it is a sign between me and you throughout your generations; that ye may know that I am the LORD that doth sanctify you.*"

(The Bible says that *the seal (sign) of God* is His 7th-day Sabbath, in memory of the fact that God created the earth in 6 days and rested on the 7th day of creation, making it a holy day. (Gen.2:1-3; Ex.20:8-11; Ezek.20:12,20)

*"To such Christian subjects [not those he considered false ones whom the Arabs tormented]; Mohomet readily granted the security of their persons, the freedom of their trade, the property of their goods, and the toleration of their worship."* (Gibbon, *Decline and Fall*, Vol.V:439-W; 579-580; 390-391)

Revelation 9:4 prophesied how Abu Beker (Muhammad's successor) instructed his army to leave at peace those Christians who kept the true seventh-day Sabbath (the seal of God), but to kill the Roman Catholics, who were seen as pretenders.

Here is an important characteristic, that Islam in the First Woe is used as a shelter to God's Sabbath-keeping people by distracting the army of Rome that was persecuting these true Bible followers, and is also used to punish a corrupted Roman counterfeit.

Here again from the *Koran*:

*“From those, too, who call themselves Christians, We did take a covenant, but they forgot a good part of the message that was sent them... And soon will Allah show them what it is they have done.”* (Sura 5.14 Al-Maeda)

Rev.9:5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented **five months**: and their torment *was* as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

v.6 And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

v.10 And they [the locusts] had tails like unto scorpions, and there were **stings in their tails**: and their power was to hurt men **five months**.

Says the prophecy of Isaiah: *"the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail."* (Isaiah 9:15)

History affirms that the Saracens, who were from the children of the east, were a “torment” to the eastern empire of Rome, just as the sacred records foretold long ago that they would be. Their military invasions into the eastern Roman empire lasted **“five months” of prophetic time**, exactly as prophesied.

In symbolic Bible prophecy, a day represents a year in real time. (Numbers 14:34 and Ezekiel 4:6) - *"I have appointed you each day for a year."*

1 biblical month = 30 days.

5 biblical months = 5 x 30 = 150 days.

In prophecy each day represents an actual year.  
So 150 prophecy days represents 150 actual  
years.

The Saracens were not to totally destroy, but to “torment” for  
150 years.

***When did the 150 years start?*** Near the close of the 13th  
century, Othman founded a government; and July 27, 1299, he  
entered Nicomedia—the first attack of the Ottoman government  
on eastern Rome. They were to hurt men "five months", 150  
years of real time.

July 27, 1299, plus 150 years, equals July 27, 1449.  
(1299 + 150 = 1449).

The Muslims tormented the Eastern Roman empire for ***150  
years***, but could never destroy it completely, and were unable to  
conquer Eastern or Western Rome, thus "*they should not kill  
them*" (not destroy the empire), but "*hurt*" them (v.10).

In 1449 a change came. The tormenting, for a time, ceased.

Rev.9:7 And the shapes of ***the  
locusts were like unto horses***  
prepared unto battle; and on  
their heads were as it were  
***crowns like gold***, and their  
faces were as the faces of men.

The ***locusts*** of Arabia literally ***look like little horses***. In fact the  
Bedouins describe them as "soldiers' horses". The old Italians  
called them "little horses".

In the Bible the locust denotes ***swarming numbers***.

Nahum 3:15 - "***Make thyself many as the locusts.***"

It's a neat symbol of the amazing numbers of the Arabs as they swarmed out of the desert in conquest.

The Arab warriors on their swift horses did not march in rows or ranks like Greek or Roman soldiers, they ***swarmed down onto their enemies*** on their swift horses almost as quickly as if they were flying (***sounding and behaving like locusts***).

The Arab tribes issuing from Arabia with their great speed, struck the army of Rome suddenly and unexpectedly, symbolised by the swarms of locusts.

The "***Crowns of Gold***" were the ***yellow turbans*** these men wore. These were their ornament and their boast. That is what identified them. And the Bible says:

Ezekiel 23:42 - "*The Sabeans from the wilderness which put beautiful crowns upon their heads.*"

Rev.9:8-9 And they had hair as the ***hair of women***, and their teeth were as ***the teeth of lions***. And they had breastplates, as it were ***breastplates of iron***; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of ***many horses running to battle***.



The same symbol is repeated as in verse 7, "*And the shapes of the locusts were like unto **horses prepared unto battle***". So militant Islam is represented in Bible prophecy as an angry horse, war horse or battle horse. So again in Rev 9:9, as "***many horses running to battle***", and in verse 16 as "***an army of horsemen.***" Which agrees with the ancestor of the Arabs, being called in Genesis 16:12 "*a wild man*", but in the Hebrew it actually reads "*wild ass*" or *donkey, or horse*.

They also wore iron *breast-plates, long hair*, either braided up or loose, with full beards.

The "*teeth of lions*" represented their fierceness in battle. Militant Muslims were extremely destructive, which is typical of the lion. Naturalists inform us that the *home of the lion is Arabia*, and in Arabic literature the *lion is the constant emblem* of the valiant warriors.

Rev.9:11 - They had *a king over them*, which is the *angel* of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is *Abaddon*, but in the Greek tongue hath his name

There was no central king over the Arabs and each tribe had its own ruler; but, for the first time, *in 1299, Othman became king and the "Ottoman Empire" was set up*. We know that the *"five months"* begins at this time because the prophecy says *"they have a king"*.

The word *"angel"* means *"messenger"*. This can refer either to a man or to a celestial being.

Both names, Abaddon, and Apollyon, mean *"one who destroys"*.

In this First Woe, they were only to torment their targets. However, in the Second Woe their role would be expanded.

## 27

## THE SECOND WOE... AND THE AWAKENING

Revelation 9:12-14 One woe is past; and, behold, there come two woes more hereafter.

And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God,

Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose *the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.*

That the woe messages of destruction in Revelation 9 come to us from God can easily be seen by the wording related to this Second Woe. The Bible states very clearly that these messages came from “*a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God*” in the heavenly sanctuary. One can be assured *that it is God who is directing these movements on earth.*

*Upon whom was this prophesied Second Woe to fall?* The idol-worshiping religious system mentioned under the First Woe - the one that received this divine chastisement and “repented not”.

It is the same religious system, the same Roman papal system that has turned away from the pure truth of the Bible, as well as those who closely associate themselves with it.

Whose hand did God direct to administer this Second Woe? Once again we note the involvement of the **children of the east.**

So now, under the **Second Woe**, we see this same **Islamic power**, but this time coming from the "*river Euphrates*", which is now the country of Turkey. The "*four angels*" refer to the *four great sultanates - Bagdad, Damascus, Iconium, and Aleppo* of which at that time the Turkish power was composed. The command to loose these signifies, in short, the letting loose of all the elements of Islam for the final sweeping away of the last element of the [Eastern] empire of Rome.

The Roman empire, after Constantine, was divided into 3 parts and this *third part* related to the third part of the empire which was under the scourge (the Eastern). When Constantine died the 3-part division was made among his 3 sons, Constantius (the East, based in Constantinople), Constantine II (Britain, Gaul and Spain), and Constans (Illyricum, Africa and Italy). This *third part* in the prophecy related to the **Greek, Eastern Roman empire**, whose capital was Constantinople.

Rev.9:16 And the number of the army of the horsemen *were two hundred thousand thousand:* and I heard the number of them.

Greek and Hebrew text for verse 16 is "*myriads*" (compare the Hebrew in Gen 24:60, Num10:36 and Dan 7:10) *and was actually the Turkish method of numbering!* They numbered by *tomens*. A tomen is *ten thousand people* or the number ten thousand, or myriad. (*200 tomens = 2 million*)

The historian Gibbon himself uses this very term when he describes the Turks. Alluding to the leader of the Eastern Turks he says,:

*"The [Bosporus] sea rolled between the two continents of Europe and Asia and the lord of so many tomens or myriads of horse was not master of a single galley".*  
(Gibbon, Vol VII p72)

Of the Turkish invasion of Asia Minor he says:

*"The myriads of Turkish horses overspread a frontier of 600 miles..."* (Gibbon, Vol VI, p.252)

Rev.9:17-18 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breastplates of *fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone*: and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and *out of their mouths issued fire and smoke* and brimstone. By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths.



In verses 17-18, the word "Jacinth" in the Greek denotes the colour blue. Thus when it speaks of "*fire and jacinth and brimstone*" it means red, blue and yellow. *Fire is red, jacinth is blue and brimstone (sulphur) is yellow.* And *these were the colours of the uniforms* of the Turkish army.

Daubuz, an English scholar writing of the time, says: "*From their first appearance the Ottomans have affected to wear war-like apparel of scarlet, blue and yellow.*" (Daubuz, Quoted By Elliott, *Horae Apocalyptica*, ch. VII, p.508)

**Rev.9:18** **By these three** was the third part of men killed, by the **fire**, and by the **smoke**, and by the **brimstone**, which issued out of their mouths.

This verse expresses the deadly effect of the new mode of warfare introduced. It was **by means of these three agents** - gunpowder, firearms and cannon - that Constantinople finally fell into the hands of the Turks. Mahomet II used *canons* to take Constantinople on 29th of May, 1453. *Gunpowder and guns* were used for the first time against the people of Eastern Europe. The Ottomans were one of the first armies to use gunpowder (which contains sulphur - brimstone).



When the pistols were held close to the horses as they rode to battle, *it looked like fire and brimstone came from the mouths of the horses.*

Rev.9:19 For their *power is* in their mouth, and in *their tails*: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

Verse 19 is referring to the Turks' flag sign, the standard which was a horse's tail. The horse's tail was the badge of authority, as Elliott says, "*The ensign of one, two, or three horse tails that marks distinctively the dignity and power of the Turkish Pasha*". (Elliott, ch VII, p.514)

Says the prophecy of Isaiah: "*the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail.*" (Isaiah 9:15)

### **Islamic intervention to protect the Protestant Reformation of the sixteenth century**

Rev.9:20-21 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet *repented not* of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: *Neither repented* they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

Verses 20 and 21 elaborate on how radical Islam was used to punish Rome and disobedient Christianity, but they still refused to turn from their evil ways. **But this Muslim attack on Rome**

**and her agents also helped to save the true followers of the Bible from Rome's attacks.**

It was during the same time frame of the Second Woe that the Reformation of the sixteenth century took place in Europe. Some of those within the corrupt church of Rome saw its errors and protested these errors. Chief among them was a devout Roman Catholic priest in Germany - the reformer Martin Luther.

Then Islam intervened in **protecting** those who sought to escape from the iron grip of the Roman Vatican. Historians abound with reports of how this occurred.

*“When a crisis arose in the affairs of the Reformation, and the kings obedient to the Roman See [the papal hierarchy] had united their swords to strike, and with blow so decisive that they should not need to strike a second time, the Turk, obeying One Whom he knew not, would straightway present himself on the eastern limits of Europe, and in so menacing an attitude, that the swords unsheathed against the poor Protestants had to be turned in another quarter. The Turk was **the lightning-rod that drew off the tempest**. Thus did Christ cover His little flock with the shield of the Moslem.”* (J. A. Wylie, *History of Protestantism* Volume 1, p.474)

*“It is you who have brought this Muslim scourge upon us,’ cried the Pope's agents to the Protestants.*

*“‘Not so,’ said Luther [the Protestant leader]. ‘It is God who has unloosed this army, whose king is **Abaddon the destroyer**. They have been sent to punish us for our sins, our ingratitude for the Gospel, our blasphemies, and above all, our shedding of the blood of the righteous.’”* (*Ibid.*, Vol. 1, p.567)

You notice how Martin Luther understood that this prophecy (see Revelation 9:11) applied to the Muslims.

The Vatican had **passed a death decree against the Protestants** and the priests were stirring up the people to have the Protestants put to death.

But Soliman the Magnificent, setting out from Constantinople on the 23rd of April, 1526, at the head of a mighty army, and swollen at last to 300,000 Turks, came nearer and nearer to Hungary. The land now shook with terror.

“The Turk became *the conducting-rod that drew off the lightning of the Vatican and helped to shield Europe*” (*Ibid.*, Vol. 2, p.598) and *“to save Protestantism in Hungary, though he was all unaware of the service which he performed.”* (*Ibid.*, Vol.3, p.221)

*“In the 16th and 17th centuries support and encouragement for Protestants and Calvinists... were one of the fundamental principles of Ottoman policy.”* (Halil Inalcik, "The Heyday and Decline of the Ottoman Empire" in *History of Islam*, pp.325-329)

*“There would have been no Protestantism had there been no Turk.”* (Kenneth Oster, *Islam Reconsidered*, p.72. Quoted by M. Maxwell in *God Cares II* pp.255-256)

Thus we find that Islamic forces, in the form of the Ottoman Turks, were instruments in God’s hands for the fulfilment of Bible prophecy. Constantinople (the capital of the Eastern Roman empire) fell into the hands of Muslims. The Eastern Roman empire collapsed. Today that same city is named Istanbul, Turkey.

In the First Woe, God used Islam to punish a power that had fallen away from true Christianity, while at the same time protecting those who lived according to God's commandments.

In the Second Woe, God used Islam to divert the destructive forces of persecution and enable the Reformation to go forward.

Islamic forces were to be *God's instruments*, both for *protection of God's obedient people* and for *chastisement of those who had turned away from Bible truth*.

## To occur again soon

Looking ahead to the Third Woe, we can again expect history to be repeated.

As in the First Woe and the Second Woe, so in the coming Third Woe we can expect the hand of Rome to be raised, ready to persecute faithful followers of God, when suddenly and unexpectedly **radical Islam strikes the Vatican's enforcer or "army"**, which today is America. Then Rome's "army" is *distracted* while it "restrains" radical Islam and the people of God are *sheltered* during the sealing time (Revelation 7:1-4). More on that later.

Meanwhile, the Second Woe continues:

## Amazing timing - to the very day

v.15 And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for *an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year*, for to slay *the third part of men*.

The four sultanies of Aleppo, Iconium, Damascus, and Bagdad, were the central strength of the Ottoman Empire....Thus the power of the Turkish Empire was *loosed*. It was to be loosed for an hour, a day, a month, and a year.

An hour, a day, a month, and a year in Bible prophecy equals 391 years and 15 days.

Hour = - 15 days (1/24 of 360 years)  
 Day = 1 year  
 Month = 30 years  
 Year = 360 years \_\_\_\_\_  
 391 years - 15 days

This Second Woe began at the close of the First Woe on July 27, 1449.

In 1449, the emperor of the Eastern Roman empire died, and before his brother, Constantine XIII, dared take the throne, he asked permission of Amurath, the Turkish Sultan who had his capital at Adrianople. Thus the independence of the Eastern empire was gone, voluntarily surrendered to the Turks.

From July 27, 1449 to August 11, 1840 - Between those two dates are exactly 391 years and 15 days.

In 1838 a Bible scholar, Josiah Litch, announced publicly that Bible prophecy foretold the Ottoman Empire "*will lose supremacy on August 11, 1840.*"

As the time approached, thousands watched with intense interest. Non-believers waited to see if the prophecy would fail.

A war broke out between Egypt and the Sultan's subjects in Syria. This threatened the integrity and independence of the Ottoman Empire. No longer strong enough to handle the situation, the Sultan saw his throne in danger. There was a fear also that the security of Europe might come under threat.

August 11, 1840 arrived. And that very same day the Turkish leader voluntarily signed a paper that took away the independence and power of the Turkish Sultan forever. Almost overcome by Mehemet Ali, Pasha of Egypt, the Sultan of Turkey put his affairs into the hands of four European powers - Britain, Russia, Prussia and Austria - who had come together in

a "coalition of the willing" to decide the fate of this Islamic power. So it was that on this date the Ottoman empire relinquished its autonomy. Its independence was gone!

Numerous skeptics were in shock. They now believed Bible prophecy.

## **Prophecies expected to be unsealed**

The Reformers had expected that, as the Reformation continued, a special judgment hour message would eventually be given to the world. Prophecies not yet understood would, when their time was ripe, become plain.

In the 1500s, Luther declared before his death:

I persuade myself verily that the day of **judgment** will not be absent full **three hundred years more**. God will not, can not, suffer this wicked world much longer. *Table Talk*

Sir Isaac Newton, who died in 1727, referring to the prophecy of Revelation 14:6-14, wrote:

An angel must fly through the midst of heaven with the everlasting gospel to preach to all nations, before Babylon falls and the Son of man reaps his harvest.... 'Tis therefore a part of this prophecy, that **it should not be understood before** the last age of the world; and therefore it makes for the credit of the prophecy that it is **not yet understood**.

**But** if the last age, **the age of opening these things, be now approaching**, as... it seems to be, we have more encouragement than ever to look into these things. If **the general preaching of the gospel** [of

**Revelation 14] be approaching**, it is to us and to our posterity that these words mainly belong.

In **the time of the end** the wise shall understand, but none of the wicked shall understand.... 'Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein. *Observations on the Apocalypse, chap.1. London, 1733*

John Wesley, who died in 1788, urged the earnest study of prophecy, because he believed that important predictions were "on the point of being fulfilled."

Happy is he that readeth [prophecy], and they that hear and keep the words thereof: especially at this time when so considerable a part of them is **on the point of being fulfilled**. *Notes on the New Testament*

Daniel's time prophecy of the 2,300 years of chapter 8 fixed **the beginning of the judgment** scheduled to occur in the heavenly sanctuary before Jesus returns, and marked the rise of **the definite movement predicted in Revelation 14:6-14, proclaiming this judgment-hour as come**, and calling men to turn from the traditions of the papacy and to "keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus."

## **Increase of prophetic knowledge foretold**

Daniel's prophecy states that in "*the time of the end*" "*many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.*" (Daniel 12:4)

The thought in the original Hebrew is not primarily of a running or travelling about, so much as of a "**searching**" **to and fro**. The "time of the end" was to be a time of **searching for light and truth**, of the opening up of the Word of God, with

increasing knowledge and enlightenment.

This certainly includes also the idea of the literal running to and fro. It is surely no accident that the dawn of the Reformation in Europe was also the dawn of the era of geographical discovery. This opened up the whole world to receive the knowledge of God's Word.

According to the prophecy, "the time of the end" began at the close of the period of papal supremacy, **in the end of the 18th century**. And, as the prophecy stated, it was seen that the end time was approaching. There was **searching to and fro for yet further light**.

The prophecy, pointing to the closing years of the 18th century, said that from that time onward would be ushered in an age of increase of knowledge. The wonderful increase in human knowledge has resulted in inventions and technology which has made possible the means for spreading increased knowledge of the Lord, the gospel message, to reach all nations, tribes and languages in these last days.

Bible prophecy predicted the ending of 1260 years of papal supremacy in 1798. Bible scholars recognised the stirring events of this time as indicators that the end events were approaching. Writing of these times, an Anglican clergyman wrote:

Stirring incidents had taken place. During their occurrence **some people** had been led to imagine that **the "mystery of God was drawing to a close, and that the events of every year explained something previously unknown."** And now, with mingled apprehension and hope, they were looking anxiously forward. They were filled with the idea that the period in which they were living would prove to be the critical turning point in the commencement of the end. *Edward Miller, M.A., in Irvingism, Vol. 1, page 11*

## Simultaneously worldwide

In these times light came to Bible students as to the ending of the prophetic period of 2300 years (Daniel 8:14), reaching to the judgment time. Hitherto, the event from which the period dated had not been clear. Now the subject opened up, and it was seen that the period was to be reckoned from the commandment to restore Jerusalem (in the seventh year of Artaxerxes, 457 BC) after the Jewish captivity in Babylon (as explained by the angel in Daniel 9).

Light on this came almost simultaneously to searchers for truth in many parts, to men working and studying **independently of one another**.

This Christian movement arose in different countries around the world at the same time. In different lands were isolated bodies of Christians who solely by the study of the Scriptures arrived at the belief that Christ's second coming was near. These included Baptists, Presbyterians, Methodists, Lutherans, Anglicans, Episcopalians, Congregationalists, and Disciples of Christ—gave intensive study to **the prophecy of Daniel chapter 8**. (Froom, *Prophetic Faith of Our Fathers*, vol. 4)

J.N. Loughborough gives "a list of **twenty different parties who discovered the truth** concerning the close of the 2300 day/years, **not by communication with each other**, but as a result of diligent searching of the Scriptures, led by the influence of the Sprit of God." (*Loughborough, Great Second Advent Movement, page 86*)

The interest grew into **a great awakening** as the year 1844 drew near. It was thought that the coming of the judgment-hour meant also the second coming of Christ. **The message of the approaching judgment** was heralded throughout the United States, Canada and Great Britain. Witnesses were raised up in Holland, Germany, Russia, and the Scandinavian countries. The travelling missionary Joseph Wolff preached of the coming

judgment-hour in remarkable journeyings through Greece, Turkey, Palestine, Egypt, Arabia, and on through Afghanistan to India. Papers were printed in various countries to publishing the message, and publications were sent to mission stations **in all parts of the world.**

Speaking of the days just before 1844, an Anglican writer, Mourant Brock, said:

It is not merely in Great Britain that the expectation of the near return of the Redeemer is entertained, and the voice of warning raised, but also in America, India, and on the continent of Europe. In America, **about three hundred ministers** of the word are thus preaching "this gospel of the kingdom," whilst in this country, **about seven hundred of the Church of England** are raising the same cry. *Advent Tracts, Vol. II, page 135. (1844)*

Prominent among them in America was a Baptist preacher William Miller. In other countries arose other Bible students, proclaiming the same expectation.

They concluded that this event would take place in the year 1844 at the end of the 2,300 years referred to in that prophecy.

Not all who joined in this proclamation explained the prophecies alike, or emphasised the definite year 1844 as the hour of God's judgment; but as this hour came, the world was ringing with the call to prepare to meet the judgment, even as the hosts of Israel were anciently called by the trumpet peals to prepare for the symbolic day of atonement.

**The great Advent awakening in the days of 1844 was of God, in fulfilment of prophecy.** The apostle John, in the book of Revelation, was shown the future, in which the message of the judgment-hour would be carried to the nations of the earth as that hour came (Revelation 14:6,7). And, just as prophesied, the

world did hear the trumpet-call of the message: "Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come."

## **Prophetic stand vindicated**

The accurate fulfilment of the Second Woe prophecy with the downfall of the Ottoman empire on August 11, 1840, placed its seal upon the fact that those giving the Advent Awakening message **had the correct understanding of the "year = a day" principle of Bible prophecy.**

It gave impetus to the prophetic awakening among the churches.

From Daniel's prophecy "*then shall the sanctuary be cleansed,*" it was assumed that the sanctuary was this earth and that it would be cleansed by fire by the return of Jesus, after which there was to be "*time no longer*".

So thousands waited with breathless anticipation as the date approached.

## **Disappointment and re-study**

When the date passed and the expected event did not materialize, there was bitter disappointment.

As a result of their disappointment, many **gave up** the study of prophecy **or turned from** the historicist method of interpreting prophecy, which had led to these conclusions.

## **Parallel to the past**

Although those who looked for His appearance in the clouds of heaven were disappointed, yet they had faithfully given the

judgment-hour call. And **that was the message due to the world at that time.**

And some of them began to ask, could it be that we were **wrong not about the date but the event?**

These **continued to study this prophecy** and the subject of the sanctuary with much prayer and intensity, continuing to look to Christ's ministry in the heavenly sanctuary on their behalf. Rich new insights into that ministry rewarded their efforts. They discovered that the historic prophetic faith of the early church and of the Reformation was still valid. The prophetic time calculations were indeed correct. The 2,300 years had ended in 1844.

Their mistake—and that of all interpreters of that time—was in their understanding of **what event** was to take place at the end of that prophetic period. New light from Christ's sanctuary ministry turned their disappointment into hope and joy.

They were reminded of the disappointment of Christ's first disciples. In the days of our Saviour's first advent, the disciples and the populace had proclaimed the triumphal entry of Christ into Jerusalem. Those disciples had accepted the popular view that Messiah was about to establish an immediate earthly kingdom, and, when this did not occur, they were devastated.

Instead of enthroning Him as king, they witnessed His crucifixion. But, in proclaiming the coming of Zion's King to Jerusalem, they were fulfilling the prophecy that had been uttered, and were giving the message for that day, despite their mistaken view as to the events that would follow.

Just so, the trumpet-call of the coming judgment-hour was the message for the days of 1844, and the message was given, attended by the power of God. When the hour was at hand, the providence of God raised up witnesses even though those engaged in the work did not understand fully the events that

were to follow.

On that day of Christ's triumphal entry into Jerusalem, the priests asked Jesus to rebuke the children who were crying the welcoming message of the prophecy. But Jesus answered them, "If these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out." (Luke 19:40) The prophetic cry was bound to be raised, and children's voices joined in fulfilling the sure word.

Likewise, in the days of 1843, the authorities in one part of Sweden sought to suppress the proclamation of the judgment-hour message. Then children, the history tells us, were moved upon to preach, and to urge people to prepare for the judgment - some of these children being so small that they had to stand upon tables to be seen - and the convicting and converting power of God attended their work.

Thus, as the time for the prophecy came, proclamation was made to turn the attention of the men to the solemn commencement of the judgment of open books in heaven (Daniel 7:9,10,26), which began in 1844. When that hour closes, the hour of repentance and forgiveness will be forever past.

The measuring line of 2300 years reaches to the latest fixed time set in the prophetic word. It is the last timed signpost for human history. From then on, mankind enters the succession of closing events.

While the scenes of the judgment are passing in the courts above, the final three-stage gospel message (Revelation 14:6-12) is borne "to every nation, kindred, tongue and people".

And in fulfilment of this, out of the great awakening of the days of 1844 arose the definite advent movement, in fulfilment of prophecy, to carry the last message to all the world, and prepare the way before the coming of Christ in power and glory.

But, like those disciples, William Miller and his associates did not fully comprehend the prophecies they proclaimed. ***Errors that had been long established in the church prevented them*** from arriving at a correct interpretation of an important point in the prophecy - the meaning of the clause "*the sanctuary shall be cleansed*". So they suffered disappointment.

To repeat: they had failed to understand the significance of the prophecy.

This mistake had been predicted.

Revelation 10:1 - And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, **clothed with a cloud**: and a **rainbow** was upon his head.

As the **Second Woe** (Revelation chapter 9), is coming to an end, we see an angel messenger immediately appear with a "*little book*" open (Revelation 10:2). He is "*clothed with a cloud*" (meaning that the message is not clear) but crowned with "a rainbow" (representing a promise of something to come)

Rev.10:2-3,6 - And he had in his hand a **little book** open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth, And cried with a loud voice... that there should be time no longer.

Striding both "land and sea" this message of the little book is shouted worldwide.

Rev.10:10 - And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

This was the little book of Daniel, which the angel had told Daniel was to be "*sealed*" (*the understanding of it was to be closed up*) until the end times. (Daniel 12:4)

As people around the world now began studying the little book of Daniel, although they tasted the sweet promise they saw in the book (signified by the rainbow) of an event about to happen in their day, it was not yet properly understood ("clothed in a cloud"). This was because it was to be a "testing" message, testing the people - to sift those who had genuine faith in God's word, from those who did not.

The remnant who would prove willing to restudy the message to get the correct understanding, would be those whom the Lord could trust to initiate the message that was prophesied to follow.

Because the first message was "clothed in a cloud" (not clearly understood), many were preaching that Jesus was returning and that there was to be "time no longer". When the date came and their expectations were disappointed, it became "bitter" to them.

Rev.10:11 - And he said unto me,  
**Thou must prophesy again** before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

But the message came, "Don't be discouraged. You are now to preach to the world again. But first there something you must do..."

As the very next verse says...

Rev.11:1 - And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

"*Measure* [study] *the temple* (= the tabernacle, the sanctuary)." And when they began to study what the Bible says about the sanctuary services, it now opened up to them and became plain.

Rev.11:19 - And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the **ark of his testament**.

This is called the "**ark of the testament**", because it contains the **ten commandments**, known as "the testimony". The earthly given to Moses was a shadow of what is in the heavenly.

Exodus 34:28-29; 31:18; 25:21-22 - the **ten commandments**... tables of testimony written with the finger of God...[in] **the ark of the testimony**.

Their study of Biblical teachings on the sanctuary revealed that the two prophecies of Daniel 7 and Daniel 8 explained each other... that the judgment described in Daniel 7 paralleled the sanctuary cleansing of Daniel 8. That, when the 2,300 years ended in 1844, Christ came to the Ancient of Days (in Daniel 7) and began the final phase of His high-priestly ministry in the heavenly sanctuary.

This ministry was pre-figured in the Old Testament Hebrew Day of Atonement "sanctuary cleansing" services, which were "*a figure of the true*", and which Daniel 7 depicts as the pre-Advent judgment of open books.

This new insight into Christ's heavenly ministry was not a departure from the historic Christian faith. Rather, it is the **logical completion** and inevitable consummation of that faith.

The command in Revelation 11:1 is not only to "*measure*" the temple (the sanctuary), but also to measure "*them that worship therein*". "*Measure*" in this context means "examine by a fixed standard".

And **what is the standard by which all will be judged?**

James 2:10-12 - Whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that **shall be judged by the law of liberty.**

"*Sin is transgression of the law*" (1 John 3:4), and those who transgress the law are slaves to sin.

On the other hand, when we, by the power of the Holy Spirit, have that law in our hearts (Hebrews 10:16), so that we love to obey, we are no longer slaves to sin. That is why the Bible calls **the ten commandments the "*law of liberty*"**. In identifying the law of liberty, the Scripture quotes from this ten commandment law. Then it says we shall be judged by it.

Ecclesiastes 12:13-14 - Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep **his commandments**: for this is the whole duty of man. For God shall bring every work into **judgment**, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil.

Revelation 11:18-19 - [It is] **the time.. that they should be judged...** [so] there was seen... the ark of his testament [**the ten commandments**].

Revelation 14:6,12 - **the hour of his judgment is come...** here are they that keep **the commandments of God** and the faith of Jesus.

And so there now arose a prophetic movement destined to go to the whole world, announcing that we were now in the end times and that "the hour of judgment has begun." The end times is judgment time. Hence the call to come back to God's commandments. That's why the command in Revelation 11:1 is not only to "*measure*" the temple (the sanctuary), but also to measure "*them that worship therein*". "*Measure*" in this context means "*examine by a fixed standard*".

**What is the standard to which we must measure up?** It is God's law, which is a transcript of God's own beautiful character.

If we are willing, and surrender our lives to Him, He is ready to place that perfect law into our hearts.

Hebrews 10:16 - "*This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them.*"

Jesus said, "*I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law [is] within my heart.*" (Psalm 40:8) And **that is the standard** He desires for us to attain.

Not only that, but **He promises the power** to become like Him, for us to measure up "*unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ.*" (Ephesians 4:13)

Impossible? No! Our God can do anything. But the willingness must come from us. He is a God of love who will never force Himself upon us.

## 28

# CLEANSING THE SANCTUARY

After the 1844 disappointment, Bible scholars discovered that Bible prophecy had foretold that disappointment, and that it was to be followed by an investigation of the truth concerning the heavenly sanctuary. "*Measure* [study] *the temple* (= the tabernacle, the sanctuary)" (Revelation 11:1). And when they began to study what the Bible says about the sanctuary services, the subject now opened up to them and became plain.

In the prophecy of Daniel 8, two animals that were used to represent Medo-Persia and Greece were not wild animals of prey, but **animals associated with the Israelite sanctuary services**. This is because **the theme** of this Daniel 8 prophecy is the sanctuary - not the earthly, which was a copy of the heavenly, but the heavenly original itself, where Jesus Christ, our High Priest, functions as our representative before God.

In Daniel 8:26-27 the angel explained all parts of the prophetic vision except the 2,300 days and **the cleansing of the sanctuary**. Where the interpretation for these parts of the vision would be expected, Daniel was instead told to **close up** the vision.

### *Christ's Ministry in the Heavenly Sanctuary*

It is 3pm on the 14th day of the Jewish month Nisan, in 31 AD. The hour of the evening sacrifice arrives. The priest stands in the court of the Temple in Jerusalem ready to offer a lamb as sacrifice. As he raises the knife to kill the victim, the earth convulses. Terrified, he drops the knife and the lamb escapes. Over the din of the earthquake he hears a loud ripping noise as

an unseen hand rends the veil of the Temple from top to bottom. After

Across town, black clouds enshroud a cross. When Jesus, the Passover Lamb of God, calls out, "It is finished!" He dies for the sins of the world.

The old sacrificial symbol has today met its fulfilment. The very event to which the Temple services have pointed through the centuries has now taken place. The Saviour has completed His atoning sacrifice, and because symbol has met reality, the rituals foreshadowing this sacrifice have been superseded. Hence the torn veil, the dropped knife, the escaped lamb.

*But there is more to salvation history.* It reaches beyond the cross. Jesus' resurrection and ascension direct our attention to the heavenly sanctuary, where, no longer the Lamb, He now ministers as Priest. The once-for-all sacrifice has been offered (Heb. 9:28); and now He makes available to all the benefits of this atoning sacrifice.

## **The Sanctuary in Heaven**

God instructed Moses to build as His earthly dwelling place (Ex. 25:8) the first sanctuary that functioned under the first (old) covenant (Heb. 9:1). This was a place where people were taught the way of salvation.

About 400 years later the permanent Temple in Jerusalem built by King Solomon replaced Moses' portable tabernacle. After Nebuchadnezzar destroyed that Temple, the exiles who returned from Babylonian captivity built the second Temple, which Herod the Great beautified and which the Romans destroyed in AD 70.

The New Testament reveals that the new covenant also has a sanctuary, one that is in heaven. In it Christ functions as High

Priest "*at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty.*" This sanctuary is the "true tabernacle which the Lord erected, and not man" (Heb. 8:1, 2). \*

---

\* In Hebrews 8:2 the word "sanctuary" is a translation of the Greek *ta hagia*, **plural** form of the holy place (thing). Additional usages of this plural term can be found, e.g., in Hebrews 9:8, 12, 24, 25; 10:19; 13:11. The various translations give the impression that Christ ministers only in the Most Holy Place or the holy place (see KJV, NKJV, NIV, and NASB), not the sanctuary. This is because the translators consider *ta hagia* an intensive plural, translatable as a singular. But a study of the Septuagint and Josephus shown that the term *ta hagia* does consistently refer to "holy things" or the "holy places" (plural, not singular) i.e., to the sanctuary itself. It is the general term used to refer to the entire sanctuary, with its holy and Most Holy places.

That Hebrews uses *ta hagia* to refer to the entire sanctuary has strong exegetical support in the epistle itself. The first use of *ta hagia* in Hebrews occurs in 8:2 and is in apposition to "the true tent." Since it is clear from 8:5 that "tent" (*skene*) indicates the entire sanctuary, in Hebrews 8:2 *ta hagia* likewise must designate the entire heavenly sanctuary. There is no reason to translate the plural *ta hagia* in Hebrews as the Most Holy Place. In most cases the context favors the translation of *ta hagia* as "the sanctuary" ("Christ and His High Priestly Ministry," *Ministry*, October 1980, p. 49).

From their study of the earthly sanctuary and *ta hagia*, the Adventist pioneers concluded that the heavenly sanctuary also has two apartments. This understanding was basic to the development of their teachings on the sanctuary.

---

At Mount Sinai Moses was shown "*the pattern,*" copy, or miniature model of the heavenly sanctuary (see Ex. 25:9, 40). Scripture says that the sanctuary that Moses built was "*the copies of the things in the heavens,*" and its "*holy places. . . copies of the true*" (Heb. 9:23, 24). The earthly sanctuary and its services, then, give us special insight into the role of the heavenly sanctuary.

Throughout, the Bible speaks of a heavenly sanctuary or temple (e.g., Ps. 11:4; 102:19; Micah 1:2, 3). In vision, John the revelator saw the heavenly sanctuary. He described it as "*the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven*" (Rev. 15:5) and "*the temple of God. . . in heaven*" (Rev. 11:19). There he

saw the items that the furnishings of the holy place of the earthly sanctuary were modeled after, such as seven lampstands (Rev. 1:12) and an altar of incense (Rev. 8:3). And he saw there also the ark of the covenant which was like the one in the earthly Holy of Holies (Rev. 11:19).

The heavenly altar of incense is located before God's throne (Rev. 8:3; 9:13), which is in the heavenly temple of God (Rev. 4:2; 7:15; 16:17). Thus the heavenly throne room scene (Dan. 7:9, 10) is in the heavenly temple or sanctuary. This is why the final judgments issue from God's temple (Rev. 15:5-8).

It is clear, therefore, that the Scriptures present the heavenly sanctuary as a real place (Heb. 8:2), not a metaphor or abstraction.\* The heavenly sanctuary is the primary dwelling place of God.

---

\* The book of Hebrews depicts a real sanctuary in heaven: "The reality of the heavenly sanctuary is further underlined by the adjective 'true' in Hebrews 8:2. The heavenly sanctuary is the 'true' or better 'real' one. The Greek term used here and in 9:24 where it is also applied to the heavenly sphere is *alethinous*. This Greek adjective means 'real,' as opposed to merely 'apparent.' On account of its classical distinction to the Greek adjective *alethes*, which means 'true,' as opposed to 'false,' the adjective *alethinous*, which is used twice of the heavenly sanctuary, points seemingly unequivocally to the actual reality of a sanctuary in heaven. As God is described as 'real' in John 17:3 and consistently by Paul, as for example, in 1 Thessalonians 1:9, with the usage of *alethinous*, so other entities possess reality insofar as they are associated with His reality. As the heavenly sanctuary is associated with God's reality, so it is as real as God is real.

---

## **The Ministry in the Heavenly Sanctuary**

The message of the sanctuary was a message of salvation. God used its services to proclaim the gospel (Heb. 4:2). The earthly sanctuary services were "*a symbol [parabole in Greek - a parable] for the present time then present*" - until Christ's first advent (Heb. 9:9, 10). Through symbol and ritual God purposed by means of this gospel-parable to focus the faith of Israel upon

the sacrifice and priestly ministry of the world's Redeemer, the "*Lamb of God*," who would take away the sin of the world (Gal. 3:23; John 1:29).

The sanctuary illustrated three phases of Christ's ministry: (1) the substitutionary sacrifice, (2) the priestly mediation, and (3) the final judgment.

### ***THE SUBSTITUTIONARY SACRIFICE***

In the earthly sanctuary every sacrifice symbolized Jesus' death for the forgiveness of sin, revealing the truth that "*without shedding of blood there is no remission*" (Heb. 9:22). Those sacrifices illustrated the following truths:

**1. *God's judgment on sin.*** Because sin is a deep-seated rebellion against all that is good, pure, and true, it cannot be ignored. "*The wages of sin is death*" (Rom. 6:23).

**2. *Christ's substitutionary death.*** "*All we like sheep have gone astray; . . . and the Lord has laid on Him the iniquity of us all*" (Isa. 53:6). "*Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures*" (1 Cor. 15:3).

**3. *God provides the atoning sacrifice.*** That sacrifice is "*Christ Jesus, whom God set forth to be a propitiation by His blood, through faith*" (Rom. 3:24, 25). "*For He [God] made Him [Christ] who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him*" (2 Cor. 5:21). Christ the Redeemer took the judgment of sin upon Himself. Therefore:

*"Christ was treated as we deserve, that we might be treated as He deserves. He was condemned for our sins, in which He had no share, that we might be justified by His righteousness, in which we had no share. He suffered the death which was ours, that we might receive the life which was His. With his stripes we are healed (Isa. 53:5)."*  
(E. White, *The Desire of Ages*, p.25)

The sacrifices of the earthly sanctuary were repetitive. Like a story, this ritual parable of redemption was told and retold year after year. By contrast, the real event which they symbolised - the actual atoning death of our Lord - took place at Calvary *once for all time* (Heb. 9:26-28; 10:10-14).

**On the cross the penalty for human sin was fully paid.**

Divine justice was satisfied. From a legal perspective the world was restored to favor with God (Rom. 5:18). The atonement, or reconciliation, was completed on the cross as foreshadowed by the sacrifices, and the penitent believer can trust in this finished work of our Lord.

***THE PRIESTLY MEDIATOR***

**QUESTION:** If the sacrifice atoned for sin, **why was a priest necessary?**

**ANSWER:** The priest's role drew attention to *the need for mediation between sinners and a holy God*. Priestly mediation reveals *the seriousness of sin* and the estrangement it brought between a sinless God and a sinful creature. Just as every sacrifice foreshadowed Christ's death, so every priest foreshadowed Christ's mediatorial ministry as high priest in the heavenly sanctuary. "*For there is one God, and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus*" (1 Tim. 2:5)."

**1. Mediator and atonement.** The application of the atoning blood during the mediatorial ministry of the priest was also seen as a form of atonement (Lev. 4:35). The English term *atonement* implies a reconciliation between two estranged parties. As the atoning death of Christ reconciled the world to God, so His mediation, or the application of the merits of His sinless life and substitutionary death, *makes reconciliation* or atonement with God *a personal reality for each believer*.

The Levitical priesthood illustrates the saving ministry Christ has carried on since His death. Our High Priest, serving "*at the*

*right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens,"* functions as a "*Minister of the sanctuary and of the true tabernacle which the Lord erected, and not man*" (Heb. 8:1, 2).

The heavenly sanctuary is the great command center where Christ conducts His priestly ministry for our salvation. He is able "*to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He ever lives to make intercession for them*" (Heb. 7:25). Therefore, we are encouraged to come "*boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need*" (Heb. 4:16).

In the earthly sanctuary the priests carried out two distinct ministries - a daily ministry in the holy place, or first apartment and a yearly ministry in the Most Holy Place, or Second Apartment. Those services illustrated Christ's priestly ministry.

**2. *The ministry in the holy place.*** The priestly ministry in the holy place of the sanctuary could be characterized as a ministry of intercession, forgiveness, reconciliation, and restoration. A continual ministry, it provided constant access to God through the priest. It symbolized the truth that the repentant sinner has ***immediate and constant access to God*** through Christ's priestly ministry as intercessor and mediator (Eph. 2:18; Heb. 4:14-16; 7:25; 9:24; 10:19-22).

When the penitent sinner (the father of the family represented his wife and children, who did not offer sacrifices) came to the sanctuary with a sacrifice, he laid his hands on the head of the innocent animal and confessed his sins. This act symbolically ***transferred his sin and its penalty to the victim***. As a result, he obtained forgiveness of sins. As *The Jewish Encyclopedia* states:

*"The laying of hands upon the victim's head is an ordinary rite by which the substitution and transfer of sins are effected." "In every sacrifice there is the idea of substitution; the victim takes the place of the human*

*sinner.*" ("Atonement, Day of" in *The Jewish Encyclopedia*, ed. Isidore Singer (New York: Funk and Wagnalls Co., 1903), p.286)

The blood of the sin offering was applied in one of two ways:

- (a). If it was taken into the holy place, it was sprinkled before the inner veil and placed on the horns of the altar of incense (Lev. 4:6, 7, 17, 18).
- (b). If it was not taken into the sanctuary, it was placed on the horns of the altar of burnt offering in the court (Lev. 4:25, 30). In that case the priest ate part of the flesh of the sacrifice (Lev. 6:25, 26, 30).

In either case, the participants understood that *their sins and accountability were transferred to the sanctuary* and its priesthood.

In this ritual parable *the sanctuary assumed the penitent's guilt and accountability* - for the time being at least - when the penitent offered a sin offering, confessing his errors. He went away forgiven, assured of God's acceptance.

So in the real life experience of men and women today, when a sinner is drawn by the Holy Spirit in sorrow for his wrongs to accept Jesus Christ as his Saviour and Lord, *Christ assumes his sins and accountability*. He is freely forgiven. Christ is the believer's Surety as well as his Substitute.

In symbol and reality the holy place ministry primarily centers on the individual.

Christ's priestly ministry provides for the sinner's forgiveness and reconciliation to God (Heb. 7:25). For Christ's sake God forgives the repentant sinner, imputes to him the righteous character and obedience of His Son, pardons his sins, and records his name in the book of life as one of His children (Eph. 4:32; 1 John 1:9; 2 Cor. 5:21; Rom. 3:24; Luke 10:20).

And as the believer abides in Christ, *spiritual grace is mediated to him* by our Lord through the Holy Spirit so that he matures spiritually and develops the virtues and graces that reflect the divine character (2 Peter 3:18; Gal. 5:22, 23)."

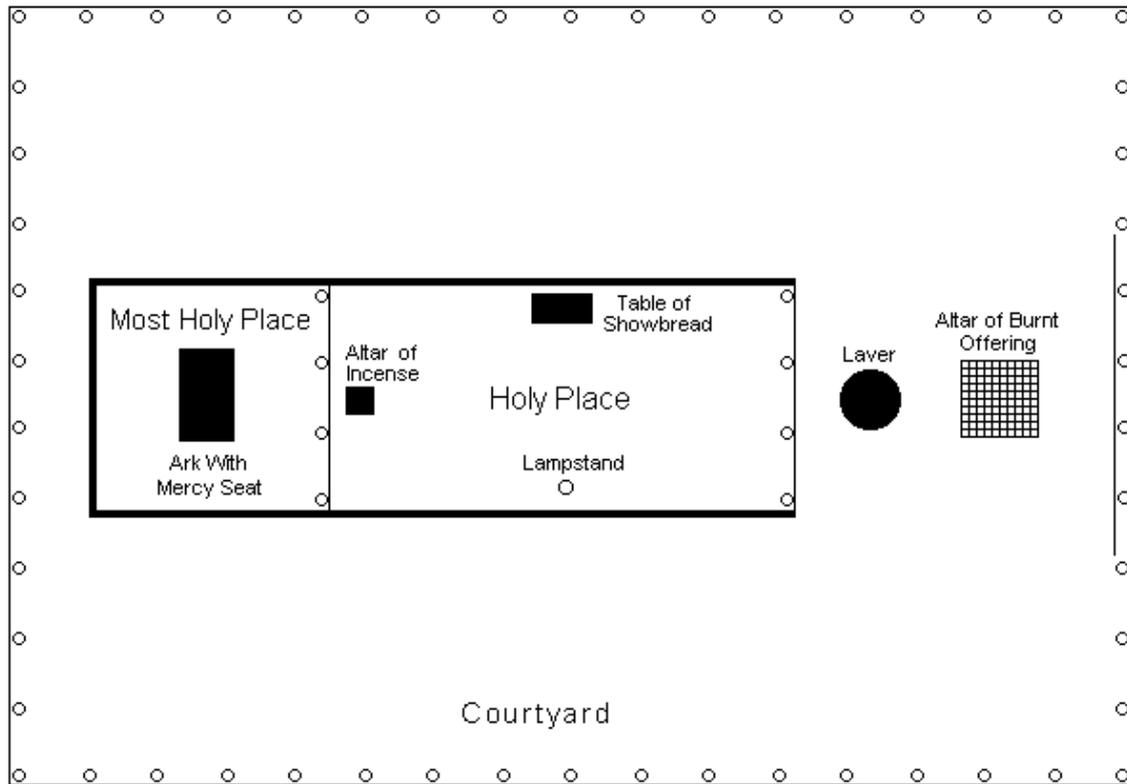
The ministry in the holy place brings about the believer's justification and sanctification.

### ***THE FINAL JUDGMENT***

The events on the Day of Atonement illustrate the *three phases of God's final judgment*. They are

- (1) the "premillennial judgment" (the judgment which occurs before Jesus returns);
- (2) the "millennial judgment"; and
- (3) the "executive judgment" which takes place at the end of the millennium.

***1. The ministry in the Most Holy Place.*** The second division of the priestly ministry is primarily sanctuary-centered, revolving around the cleansing of the sanctuary and of God's people. This form of ministry, which focused on the Most Holy Place of the sanctuary and which only the high priest could perform, was limited to one day of the religious year.



The cleansing of the sanctuary required two goats—the Lord's goat and the scapegoat (*Azazel* in Hebrew). Sacrificing the Lord's goat, the high priest made atonement for the whole sanctuary and the altar in the court (Lev. 16:20; cf. 16:16-18).

Taking the blood of the Lord's goat, which represented the blood of Christ, into the Most Holy Place, the high priest applied it directly, in the very presence of God, to the mercy seat - the cover of the ark containing the Ten Commandments - to satisfy the claims of God's holy law.

His action symbolized the immeasurable price Christ had to pay for our sins, revealing how eager God is to reconcile His people to Himself (cf. 2 Cor. 5:19).

Then he applied this blood to the altar of incense and to the altar of burnt offering which on every day of the year had been sprinkled with the blood representing confessed sins. The high priest thereby made an atonement for the sanctuary, as well as the people, and brought about *cleansing of both* (Lev. 16:16-20, 30-33).

This is why the Day of Atonement was also called the *cleansing of the sanctuary*.

Next, representing Christ as mediator, the high priest took upon himself the sins that had polluted the sanctuary and transferred them to the live goat, Azazel, which was then led away from the camp of God's people.

This action removed the sins of the people that had been symbolically transferred from the repentant believers to the sanctuary through the blood or flesh of the sacrifices of the daily ministry of forgiveness. In this way the *sanctuary was cleansed* and prepared for another year's work of ministry (Lev. 16:16-20, 30-33). And thus all things were set right between God and His people.

The ancient Israelite Day of Atonement, then, illustrates **the judgment process** that deals with the eradication of sin. The atonement performed on this day foreshadowed the final application of the merits of Christ to banish the presence of sin for all eternity and to accomplish the full reconciliation of the universe into one harmonious government under God.

**2. Azazel, the scapegoat.** The translation "*scapegoat*" (escape goat) of the Hebrew *azazel* comes from the Vulgate *caper emissarius*, "*goat sent away*" (Lev. 16:8).

A careful examination of Leviticus 16 reveals that Azazel **represents Satan**, not Christ, as some have thought.

(1) the scapegoat was **not slain as a sacrifice** and thus could not be used as a means of bringing forgiveness. For "*without shedding of blood is no remission*" (Heb. 9:22);

(2) the **sanctuary was entirely cleansed** by the blood of the Lord's goat **BEFORE the scapegoat was introduced** into the ritual (Lev. 16:20);

(3) the passage treats the scapegoat as a personal being who is the opposite of, and opposed to, God (Leviticus 16:8 reads

literally, "*One to Yahweh and the other to Azazel*"). Therefore, in the setting of the sanctuary parable, it is more consistent to see the Lord's goat as a symbol of Christ and the scapegoat - Azazel - as a symbol of Satan." \*

---

\* Throughout the centuries Bible expositors have come to similar conclusions. In the Septuagint *azazel* is rendered *apompaios*, a Greek word for a malign deity. Ancient Jewish writers and the early Church Fathers referred to him as the devil. Nineteenth- and twentieth-century expositors with similar views include Samuel M. Zwemer, William Milligan, James Hastings, and William Smith, of the Presbyterian Church; E.W. Hengstenberg, Elmer Flack, and H.C. Alleman, of the Lutheran Church; William Jenks, Charles Beecher, and F.N. PeLoubet, of the Congregational Church; John M'Clintock and James Strong, of the Methodist Church; James M. Gray, of the Reformed Episcopal Church; J.B. Rotherhorn, of the Disciples of Christ; and George A. Barton, of the Society of Friends. Many others have expressed similar views.

---

**3. *The different phases of the judgment.*** The scapegoat ritual on the Day of Atonement pointed beyond Calvary to the final end of the sin problem - the banishment of sin and Satan. ***The full accountability for sin will be rolled back upon Satan, its originator and instigator.*** Satan, and his followers, and all the effects of sin, will be banished from the universe by destruction. This judgment will, therefore, bring about a fully reconciled and harmonious universe (Eph. 1:10). This is the objective that the second and final phase of Christ's priestly ministry in the heavenly sanctuary will accomplish. This judgment will see God's final vindication before the universe.

The Day of Atonement portrayed the three phases of the final judgment:

- (a). The removal of sins from the sanctuary relates to the first, or ***pre-Advent, investigative phase of the judgment.*** - ***the judgment of open books*** referred to in Daniel 7:9-10,26. It focuses on the names recorded in the Book of Life just as the Day of Atonement focused on the removal of the confessed sins of the penitent from the sanctuary. False believers will be sifted out; the faith of true believers and

their union with Christ will be reaffirmed before the loyal universe, and *the records* of their sins will be blotted out.

- (b). The banishment of the scapegoat to the wilderness symbolizes *Satan's millennial imprisonment* on this desolated earth, which begins at the Second Advent and coincides with the second phase of the final judgment, which takes place in heaven (Revelation 20:4; 1 Corinthians 6:1-3). This *millennial judgment* involves a review of the judgment on the wicked and will benefit the redeemed by giving them insight into God's dealings with sin and those sinners who were not saved. It will answer all the questions the redeemed may have about God's mercy and justice.
- (c). The *clean camp* symbolizes the results of the *third, or executive, phase of the judgment*, when fire destroys the wicked and cleanses the earth (Rev. 20:11-15; Matt. 25:31-46; 2 Peter 3:7-13).

### ***THE HEAVENLY SANCTUARY IN PROPHECY***

In the above discussion we focused on the sanctuary from the symbol-to-fulfilment perspective. Now we will look at it in prophecy.

### ***THE CLEANSING OF THE HEAVENLY SANCTUARY.***

Speaking of the cleansing of the heavenly sanctuary, the book of Hebrews says:

Hebrews 9:22,23 - *"Almost all things are purged with*

*blood, and without shedding of blood there is no remission. Therefore it was necessary that the copies of the things in the heavens [the earthly sanctuary] should be **purified with** these [the **blood of animals**], but the heavenly things themselves [the **heavenly sanctuary**] with better sacrifices than these"—the precious **blood of Christ.**"*

As the sins of God's people were by faith placed upon the sin offering and then symbolically transferred to the earthly sanctuary, so under the new covenant the confessed sins of the penitent are by faith placed on Christ. By placing these **confessed sins on Christ**, they are **transferred**, in fact, **to the heavenly sanctuary**.

And as during the typical Day of Atonement the cleansing of the earthly sanctuary removed the sins accumulated there, so the **heavenly sanctuary is cleansed by the final removal of the record of sins** in the heavenly books. But before the records are finally cleared, they will be opened for the angels to see and to confirm God's decision regarding who through repentance and faith in Christ is entitled to enter His eternal kingdom. This is not for God's benefit, but for the benefit of the heavenly host. The cleansing of the heavenly sanctuary, therefore, involves a work of judgment that fully reflects the nature of the Israelite Day of Atonement as a day of judgment. \*

---

\* Jewish tradition has long portrayed Yom Kippur as a day of judgment, a day when God sits on His throne and judges the world. The books of records are opened, everyone passes before Him, and their destiny is sealed. See "Atonement, Day of," *The Jewish Encyclopedia*; Morris Silverman, comp. and ed., *High Holyday Prayer Book* (Hartford, Conn.: Prayer Book Press, 1951), pp. 147, 164. Yom Kippur brings also comfort and assurance to the believers, for it is "the day on which the fearful anticipation of a judgment to come finally gives place to the confident affirmation that God does not condemn, but will abundantly pardon those who turn to him in penitence and humility" (William W. Simpson, *Jewish Prayer and Worship* [New York: Seabury Press, 1965], pp. 57, 58

---

This judgment, which ratifies to the heavenly host the correctness of God's decision as to who will be saved and who will be lost, must take place before the Second Coming, for at that time Christ returns with His reward "*to give to every one according to his work*" (Rev. 22:12). Then, also, Satan's accusations will be answered (cf. Rev. 12:10). \*

---

\* This judgment deals with the professed followers of God. In the typical service only those who had come before God with confession and repentance, and whose sins, through the blood of the sin offering, were transferred to the sanctuary, had a part in the service of the Day of Atonement. So in the great day of final atonement and investigative judgment the only cases considered are those of the professed people of God. The judgment of the wicked is a distinct and separate work, and takes place at a later period. 'Judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel?' (1 Peter 4:17)

---

All who have truly repented and by faith claimed the blood of Christ's atoning sacrifice have received pardon. When their names come up in this judgment and they are found clothed with the robe of Christ's righteousness, their sins are blotted out and they are accounted worthy of eternal life (Luke 20:35). "*He who overcomes,*" Jesus said, "*shall be clothed in white garments, and I will not blot out his name from the Book of Life; but I will confess his name before My Father and before His angels*" (Rev. 3:5).

The prophet Daniel reveals the nature of this heavenly judgment. While the false religious power symbolized by the little horn is still carrying on its blasphemous and persecuting work against God and His people on earth (Daniel 7:8, 20, 21, 25), thrones (seats of judgment) are set in place and God presides over the final judgment. This judgment takes place in the throne room of the heavenly sanctuary and is attended by multitudes of heavenly witnesses. When the court is seated, the books are opened, signalling the beginning of an investigative procedure (Dan. 7:9, 10). It is not until after this judgment that the false religious power is destroyed (Dan. 7:11).

## ***THE TIME OF THE JUDGMENT***

Both Christ and the Father are involved in the heavenly judgment. Before He returns to the earth on the "*clouds of heaven*," Christ as the "*Son of Man*" comes "*with the clouds of heaven*" to the "*Ancient of Days*", God the Father, and stands before Him (Dan. 7:13). Ever since His ascension Christ has functioned as High Priest, our intercessor before God (Heb. 7:25). But at this time He comes to receive the kingdom (Dan. 7:14).

***1. The counterfeit of Christ's priestly ministry.*** Daniel 8 tells us about the controversy between good and evil and God's final triumph. This chapter reveals that an earthly religious power would falsify (set up a counterfeit of) Christ's high-priestly ministry on earth, thus obscuring the truth from the minds of the people.

***2. The time of restoration, cleansing, and judgment.*** God would not permit the counterfeit of the truth of Christ's high-priestly ministry to go on indefinitely. Through faithful, God-fearing men and women He revived His cause. The Reformation's partial rediscovery of Christ's role as our Mediator caused a great revival within the Christian world. Yet there was still more truth to be revealed about Christ's heavenly ministry.

Daniel's vision indicated that Christ's role as our high priest would be made especially prominent toward "*the time of the end*" (Daniel 8:17), when He would begin His special work of cleansing and judgment in addition to His continual intercessory ministry (Hebrews 7:25). The vision specifies when Christ was to begin this end times day of atonement ministry - the judgment of open book - (Daniel 7) and cleansing of the sanctuary - "***Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed***" (Daniel 8:14). \*

---

\* The KJV renders the Hebrew term *nitsdaq*, "shall be cleansed." The term "cleansed" is also found in the earliest English translations such as the Bishop's Bible (A.D. 1566), Geneva Bible (A.D. 1560), Taverner Bible (A.D. 1551), Great Bible (A.D. 1539), Matthew Bible (A.D. 1537), Coverdale (A.D. 1537), and Wycliffe (A.D. 1382).

In whatever way one renders the Hebrew term in a modern language, the 'cleansing' of the sanctuary includes actual cleansing as well as activities of vindicating, justifying, and restoring.

---

Because the vision refers to the time of the end, the sanctuary it speaks of cannot be the earthly sanctuary - for that was destroyed in A.D. 70. The prophecy can only therefore refer to the new covenant sanctuary in heaven - the place where Christ ministers for our salvation.

What are the 2,300 days or "2,300 evenings-mornings," as the original Hebrew reads? \*

---

\* Some have interpreted the "2300 evenings-mornings" as only 1150 literal days (e.g., TEV). But this is contrary to Hebrew usage. Carl F. Keil, editor of the Keil and Delitzsch commentary, wrote: "When the Hebrews wish to express separately day and night, the component parts of a day of a week, then the number of both is expressed. They say, e.g., 40 days and 40 nights (Gen. 7:4, 12; Ex. 24:18; 1 Kings 19:8), and three days and three nights (Jonah 2:1; Matt. 12:40), but not 80 or six days-and-nights, when they wish to speak of 40 or three full days. A Hebrew reader could not possibly understand the period of time 2300 evening-mornings of 2300 half days or 1150 whole days, because evening and morning at the creation constituted not the half but the whole day. . . . We must therefore take the words as they are, i.e., understand them of 2300 whole days" (C.F. Keil, *Biblical Commentary on the Book of Daniel*, trans. M.G. Easton, in C.F. Keil and F. Delitzsch, *Biblical Commentary on the Old Testament* [Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans, 1959], vol. 25, pp. 303, 304)

---

According to Genesis 1, an "*evening and morning*" is a day. As we have already seen earlier in this book, a time period in symbolic prophecy is also symbolic: a prophetic day represents a year. So, as many Christians throughout the centuries have understood, the 2,300 days of Daniel 8 signify 2,300 literal years.

In Chapter 19 of this present work, we discovered that *Daniel 9*

*is the key to unlocking Daniel 8.* But it will not hurt us to summarise it again briefly.

God commissioned the angel Gabriel to make Daniel "*understand the vision*" (Dan. 8:16). But its impact was so shocking that Daniel became ill and Gabriel had to discontinue his explanation. At the close of the chapter Daniel remarked: "*I was appalled by the vision and did not understand it*" (Dan. 8:27)

Because of this interruption, Gabriel had to delay his explanation of the time period—the only aspect of the vision he had not yet explained.

Daniel 9 describes his return to complete this responsibility. **Daniel 8 and 9, then, are connected**, the latter being the key to unlocking the mystery of the 2,300 days.

When Gabriel appeared he said to Daniel: "*I have come forth to show you. . . . therefore consider the matter, and understand the vision*" (Dan. 9:23). Here he refers back to the vision of the 2,300 days. His desire to explain the time elements of the vision of Daniel 8 makes clear why he introduces his explanation with the 70-weeks prophecy.

The 70 weeks, or 490 years, were "*determined*," or "*decreed*" for the Jews and Jerusalem (Dan. 9:24). The underlying Hebrew verb is *chathak*. Although this verb is used only once in the Scriptures, its meaning can be understood from other Hebrew sources. \*

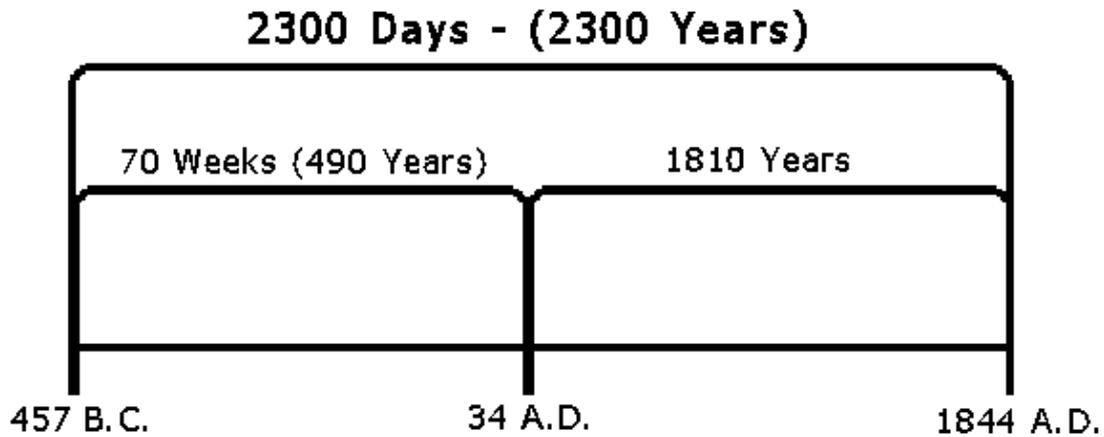
---

\* Analysis of Hebrew writings such as the Mishnah reveals that although *chathak* can mean "determine," the more common meaning has "to do with the idea of cutting" (Shea, "The relationship Between the Prophecies of Daniel 8 and Daniel 9," in *Sanctuary and Atonement*, p. 242)

---

The well-known Hebrew-English dictionary by Gesenius states that properly it means "*to cut*" or "*to divide*." (Gesenius, *Hebrew and*

*Chaldee Lexicon to the Old Testament Scripture*, trans. Samuel P. Tregelles (Grand Rapids: W.B. Eerdmans, reprint ed., 1950), p. 314)



With this background, Gabriel's comments are very revealing. He tells Daniel that 490 years were to be **cut off from** the longer period of 2,300 years. As the starting point for the 490 years, Gabriel points to "*the going forth of the command to restore and build Jerusalem*" (Dan. 9:25), which took place in 457 BC, the seventh year of Artaxerxes.

The 490 years ended in A.D. 34. When we cut off 490 years from the 2,300 years, we are left with 1810 years. Since the 2,300 years were to extend 1810 years beyond A.D. 34, they reach to the year 1844. \*

---

\* From Daniel 8 it is clear that the 2300 days have to cover a long span of years. The question is asked, "How long will the *vision* be?" (Dan. 8:13). The term "vision" is the same as used in verses 1, 2. So when the question "How long is the vision?" is raised by the heavenly angel, he is expecting an answer that covers the entire vision from the first animal symbol through the second animal symbol through the horn symbol to the end of time as is indicated in verses 17 and 19 of Daniel 8. That the 2300 evenings and mornings answers this question indicates rather clearly that they must cover the period from the Medo-Persian empire to the end of time, implying that they represent years.

---

***THE SIGNIFICANCE  
WITHIN THE WAR  
BETWEEN GOD AND SATAN***

***The Vindication of God's Character.*** Through the activities of the little horn, Satan has attempted to challenge God's authority. The acts of that power have reproached and trampled upon the heavenly sanctuary, the center of God's government.

Daniel's visions point to a pre-Advent judgment in which God will secure a verdict of condemnation upon the little horn, and thus upon Satan himself. In the light of Calvary all Satan's challenges will be refuted. All come to understand and agree that God is right; that He is not responsible for the sin problem, nor for human suffering. His character will emerge unassailable, and His government of love will be reaffirmed.

***The Vindication of God's People.*** While the judgment brings condemnation upon the apostate little horn power, it is "*made in favor of the saints of the Most High*" (Daniel 7:22). Indeed, this judgment not only vindicates God before the universe, but His people, as well. Though, throughout the centuries, the people of God have been despised and persecuted for their faith in Christ, this judgment puts things right. God's people will realize Christ's promise: "*Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess [defend as my faithful ones] before My Father who is in heaven*" (Matt. 10:32; cf. Luke 12:8, 9; Rev. 3:5).

***The Judgment and Salvation.*** Does the judgment of open books jeopardize the salvation of those who believe in Jesus Christ? Not at all. Genuine believers live in union with Christ, trusting in Him as intercessor (Rom. 8:34). Their assurance is in the promise that "*we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous*" (1 John 2:1).

**Why then a pre-Advent judgment** of open books? This "investigative" judgment is not for the benefit of the Godhead. It is **primarily for the benefit of the universe**, answering the charges of Satan and giving assurance to the unfallen creation that God will allow into His kingdom only those who truly have been converted. So God opens the books of record for impartial inspection (Daniel 7:9, 10).

Human beings belong to one of three classes: (1) those who reject God's authority; (2) genuine believers, who, trusting in the merits of Christ through faith, live in obedience to God's law; and (3) those who appear to be genuine believers but are not.

The unfallen beings can readily discern the first class. But who is a genuine believer and who is not? Both groups are written in the book of life, which contains the names of all who have ever entered God's service (Luke 10:20; Phil. 4:3; Dan. 12:1; Rev. 21:27). The church itself contains genuine and false believers, the wheat and the tares (Matt. 13:28-30).

God's unfallen creatures are not omniscient; they cannot read the heart. So a judgment is needed - before the second coming of Christ - to reveal the true from the false and to demonstrate to the interested universe God's justice in saving the sincere believer. **The issue is with God and the universe, not between God and the true child.** This calls for the opening of the books of record, the disclosing of those who have professed faith and whose names have been entered into the book of life.

Christ depicted this judgment in His parable of the wedding guests who responded to the generous gospel invitation. Because not all who choose to be Christian are genuine disciples, the king comes to inspect the guests and see who has the wedding garment. This garment represents the pure, spotless character which Christ's true followers will possess. To the church is given "*that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white,*" "*not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing,*" (Revelation 19:8; Ephesians 5:27). The fine linen, says the Scripture, "*is the righteousness of saints*" (Revelation 19:8).

It is the righteousness (right living character) of Christ, His own unblemished character, that through faith is imparted to all who receive Him as their personal Saviour. When the king inspects the guests, only those who have put on the robe of Christ's righteousness so generously offered in the gospel invitation are accepted as genuine believers.

Those who profess to be followers of God but who are living in disobedience and are not covered by Christ's righteousness will be blotted from the book of life (see Exodus 32:33).

The concept of a judgment of all who profess faith in Christ *does not contradict* the Biblical teaching of *salvation by faith through grace*. Paul knew that one day he would face the judgment. He therefore expressed the desire to "*be found in Him, not having my own righteousness, which is from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness which is from God by faith*" (Philippians 3:9).

All who are united with Christ are assured of salvation. In the pre-Advent phase of the last judgment genuine believers, those who have a saving relationship with Christ, are **affirmed before the unfallen universe**.

Christ, however, cannot assure salvation for those who only profess to be Christians on the basis of how many good deeds they have performed (see Matt. 7:21-23). The heavenly records, therefore, are more than just a tool for sifting the genuine from the false. They also are the foundation for confirming the genuine believers before the angels.

Far from robbing the believer of his assurance with Christ, the Bible teaching of the sanctuary sustains it. It illustrates and clarifies to his mind the plan of salvation.

The believer's penitent heart rejoices to grasp the reality of Christ's death for his sins. Furthermore, his faith reaches upward to find its meaning in a living Christ, his priestly Advocate in the very presence of the holy God.

### ***A TIME TO BE READY***

God intends this good news of Christ's closing ministry of salvation to go to all the world before Christ's return. Central to

this message is the everlasting gospel, which is to be proclaimed with a sense of urgency because "*the hour of His [God's] judgment has come*" (Revelation 14:7). This call **warns the world that God's judgment is taking place now.**

All who wish to retain their names in the book of life must make things right with God and their fellowmen during this time of God's judgment (Revelation 14:7).

Christ's work as high priest is nearing its completion. The years of human probation, in which human repentance is still possible are slipping away. \*

---

\* The end of human probation is the time when repentance is no longer possible. A person's probation can close in any of three ways: (1) at death; (2) when the unpardonable sin has been committed (Matt. 12:31, 32; Luke 12:10); (3) when probation is closed for all just before the Second Advent. As long as Christ functions as high priest and mediator between God and man, mercy is available. "No judgments therefore can be inflicted without mercy till Christ's work as priest has ended. But the seven last plagues are poured out without mixture of mercy [Rev. 14:10; 15:1], hence they are poured out after Christ has ceased His pleading, and probation has ended.

---

No one knows just when God's voice will proclaim, "*It is finished.*" "*Take heed,*" Jesus said, "*watch and pray, for you do not know when the time is*" (Mark 13:33).

Although we live in such an awesome time, we have no need to fear. Jesus Christ, in His twofold capacity of Sacrifice and Priest, ministers in the heavenly sanctuary in our behalf.

Hebrews 4:14-16 - Because "*we have a great High Priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our confession. For we do not have a High Priest who cannot sympathize with our weaknesses, but was in all points tempted as we are, yet without sin. Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*"



## 29

# WHO IS THE REVELATION BEAST?

Let me first say something that's very important.

You see, the reason why God speaks as strongly against worshiping the "beast" as He does is because He loves the people. He loves all people. Reader, He loves you.

He knows that a person can't possibly be happy who follows this power and receives its mark. He knows that ". . . *they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.*" (Revelation 14:11)  
In following this power there's no rest.

**He loves us so much** that He warns us in the strongest language known to man. Listen to this.

*"And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice; If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation."* (Revelation 14:9,10)

Strong language.

Language of love is always strong when it's a question of life and death to the one it loves.

I ask you, what more could our heavenly Father do?

God sent His own Son to die a hell death in our place. Not one need experience the awful fate of those who follow the beast and receive its mark.

Jesus made a way of escape. He suffered the agony of Gethsemane, and the torture of His mock trial where they beat Him until His back was like raw meat. They bowed down in mockery and hit Him in the head with a stick, driving the thorns into His brow and sending blood running down His face.

Watch Him stagger on His way to Calvary. The Son of God falls on His face in the dirt. He endures the horror of our sins while His blood runs drop by drop to the foot of the cross. Look at His quivering lips as He cries "My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken Me?"

There He hangs - like a snake on a pole, writhing in agony, drinking the last drops of the wrath of God against sin. "As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness," Jesus was lifted up - for you.

Do you see? He did it for you. He took what you and I deserve. Do you see why our Heavenly Father is so anxious that we not follow the beast or receive its mark?

We need not receive that awful penalty. Jesus paid it all.

When they were pounding the spikes through His tender flesh, and Jesus prayed "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do", He was praying for you and me then also.

He was praying for you! Will you choose Him now as your personal Saviour and follow Him all the way?

You'll be so happy that you did.

Trusting Him; obeying Him - even unto death; abiding in His love through prayer and Bible study; total surrender and a loving, happy relationship. Only then will you be safe from

worshiping the beast and receiving his "mark" - only then. Soon you'll see why.

## **It's not about individual people, but a system**

Another thing we must understand is that in identifying the "beast", God is not talking about sincere people who are involved with it "ignorantly."

Do you know what I mean?

When He identifies it He is talking about "the system", the leaders, who know what they are doing and deliberately disobey and change the word of God.

Do you see? Our God is a tender Father. He only holds accountable those who understand what the Bible commands and knowingly disobey, or, those who turn away from hearing His word and are "willingly ignorant."

The beast exists now. Many honest Christians who are now involved with it will soon learn the facts about it. They will hear God's call to come out of it. And they will respond.

Don't be fooled by thinking that the "beast" is a computer in Europe somewhere. That is only a smoke screen to get people off the track that the Bible points out. God's Word makes it so clear that even an honest child can see it.

Let's take a close look at this thing to make sure there's no mistake.

## How the "beast" power first arose

Although this great organization was not officially established with political authority until 538 AD, the Apostle Paul saw forces at work that were preparing the way. And within 20 years of the apostles' death, the perversion of the truth of Christ had become widespread. What was going on back there that he could have seen? Here's what happened.

After Jesus went back to heaven, the early church grew rapidly under the blessing of the Holy Spirit. Jesus had predicted the treatment that His people were to receive.

*Matthew 24:9 - "They shall deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you; and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake."*

That was literally fulfilled. Look at this amazing account.

*"Their execution was made into a game," wrote Tacitus, describing the persecutions under Nero. "They were covered with the skins of wild animals and torn to pieces by dogs. They were hung on crosses. They were burned, wrapped in flammable material and set on fire, to illuminate the night.*

*"To escape death, they had but to repudiate Christ and sacrifice to the emperor."*

Some did, but many more were tortured to death rather than deny their Lord.

Paganism foresaw that should the gospel triumph, her temples and altars would be swept away; therefore she summoned her forces to destroy Christianity.

Christians were stripped of their possessions and driven from their homes. Great numbers sealed their testimony with their blood. Noble and slave, rich and poor, learned and ignorant, were alike slain without mercy.

Beneath the hills outside the city of Rome, long galleries had been tunnelled through earth and rock; the dark and intricate network of passages extended for miles beyond the city walls. In these underground retreats the followers of Christ buried their dead; and here also, when suspected, they found a home.

Many were *“tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection.”* (Hebrews 11:35) They rejoiced that they were accounted worthy to suffer for the truth, and songs of triumph ascended from the midst of the crackling flames."

Satan couldn't wipe them out. For years emperors Nero and Diocletian slaughtered them by the thousands.

*“You may kill us, torture us, condemn us,’ said one Christian to his persecutors, ‘your injustice is the proof that we are innocent.’”* (Justin Martyr, *Apology*, para.50)

Until 313 AD it was against the law to be a Christian. Such a person was an automatic criminal. But the followers of Jesus spread everywhere.

Satan could see that he had to change his tactics. He would come up with a craftier scheme. What could the devil think of to do better than killing them?

Make things easy - and infiltrate! Like a cunning general he would corrupt the church from the inside.

Watch what happens.

A great shout goes up in the empire. Emperor Constantine has allegedly become a Christian! The Christians are euphoric.

No more being torn apart by dogs and lions, or used as dupes to be cut down in cold blood, or human torches to light up the arena for the gladiators. Now Christianity is the state religion! Things are going great. Or so it seems.

But little by little, as everyone relaxes and quits worrying about being tortured to death, something happens.

Compromise!

Gradually the leaders, for the sake of popularity and gain, let down the standards to make it easier for the pagans to come into the church. But this brings in errors and pagan customs.

### **Advance warning given in the Bible**

Not at all surprised by Satan's scheme to corrupt God's church - from within, God gives us fair warning. Listen to Paul's shocking words.

*2 Thessalonians 2:1-4,7 - "Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (of the Lord) shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God." "For the mystery of iniquity doth already work."*

Oh yes. He saw it coming! The mysterious work of corruption rapidly progressed after the death of the last apostle.

Question: What happened?

After persecution ceased, Satan's great device was to control the leaders of the church.

If he could inflate their ego; make them money hungry, the whole body would be affected. A popularity contest would be on to get as many heathen to accept Christianity as possible. The wealth and prestige of the church would grow. Who cares if you have to change the Bible somewhat to get them! Just introduce

some of the heathen customs and rites into Christianity, give them Christian names, and the heathen will flock in.

And of all horrors - that's just what happened!

The apostles had gone throughout the empire establishing churches in many cities. As time went by, smaller churches were built in the surrounding country sides. The large centres were in Jerusalem, Rome, and Alexandria (in Egypt). Rome finally emerged on top.

The next step in the plot was for church leaders to get control of the state to help enforce their decrees. They achieved this beyond their wildest dreams.

The epitome of this came when in 538 AD the entire city of Rome was handed over to the Pope - the Bishop of Rome. For the next 1260 years, church leaders reigned with full civil authority. All just as predicted in prophecy!

Now let's examine this important prophecy.

*Revelation 13:1 - "And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy."*



As we have already found, a "beast" is simply a political power, a nation, a kingdom, an empire. And even today we often represent nations by animal symbols. So it is in the Bible.

Let's now be detectives and discover the identity of this "beast" power.

These are not my claims , but God, in the Bible, gives us at least 14 identification clues...

### ***1. IT RECEIVED ITS POWER FROM THE DRAGON'S ROMAN EMPIRE***

*Revelation 13:2 - "...and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority."*

It is clear that the beast gets its "seat" and "authority" from the dragon. But who's the dragon?

The Bible itself tells us. *"And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years."* (Revelation 20:2) **The dragon is Satan. But there's more.**

*Revelation 12:3-5 - "And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne."*

Revelation 19:15,16 shows us that the "man child" is Christ. So, though the "dragon" represents Satan, it also denotes **a kingdom through whom Satan worked to try to kill baby Jesus** as soon as He was born. Now, what kingdom was it whose king decreed

the destruction of the babies in Bethlehem? Of course! It was King Herod. He was employed by, and a representative of Rome. So here's another clue. The beast gets its power, seat, and authority from Rome!

**Primarily, the dragon is Satan. But politically, the Roman Empire, being the historical power through whom Satan worked, is the dragon of Revelation chapter 12,**

That same dragon had "**ten horns**". (Revelation 12:3) This links this dragon also to the Roman Empire, which broke up into ten divisions already mentioned. It's coming clear. **Rome was the empire used by Satan as his agency to try to destroy the Saviour of the world!** Now let's take a closer look.

To whom did the Roman Empire hand over its seat?

*“Out of the ruins of political Rome, arose the great moral Empire in the ‘giant form’ of the Roman Church.”* (A.C. Flick, *The Rise of the Mediaeval Church*. 1900, p.150)

Roman Emperor Justinian "gave" Rome to the Pope when he decreed that the Pope should be over all the Christian churches of the earth, and established the Papacy in 538 AD, when the Emperor's general Belisarius drove the Ostrogoths from Rome.

Rome gave him his "seat." Bible prophecy predicted it hundreds of years before it happened!

## ***2. HAS THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE PREVIOUS EMPIRES***

It has characteristics of the four beasts (nations) which existed before it. Look carefully.

Revelation 13:2 - *"And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his*

*mouth as the mouth of a **lion**: and the **dragon** gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority."*

How is the "beast" of Revelation 13 **like ancient Babylon**? The emperors of Babylon claimed worship as gods. For man to be appreciated is great, but to be worshipped by other humans is blasphemous. The leader of the "beast" does this very thing!

How is the "beast" of Revelation 13 **like Medo-Persia**? It was a rule with the Medo-Persians that once they made a law - it stuck, and was always considered infallible. The "beast" power takes this same policy.

How is the "beast" of Revelation 13 **like Grecia**? Before his death, Alexander had ordered the Greek cities to worship him as a god. The "beast" of Revelation 13 is "like unto a leopard" because it took on the Greek philosophy and also has a leader that claims worship as God.

### ***3. IS BOTH POLITICAL AND RELIGIOUS***

*Revelation 13:8 - "And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world."*

This is not only a political power but a religious power as well. It demands worship and gets it.

The Roman Catholic system is a **political entity** with its own sovereign territory (the Vatican) which receives ambassadors from the nations of the world - such as only a political power can do.

It also has a religious army of priests and nuns and their followers who believe or practise at least **80 tenets of the ancient Babylonian religion**.

- \* When the empire of Babylon fell, its priests fled to Pergamos in Asia Minor to continue their religion.
- \* When the Roman empire enveloped that region, the Babylonian worship was imported into Rome.
- \* When the Roman empire broke up, the Church of Rome took over both the religious and political functions of the Roman empire. Yes, Papal Rome is, for all practical purposes, **the continuation of the Roman empire**. (See historians' testimony and Roman Catholic leadership admitting this fact in Chapter 14.)

**It is a POLITICAL organisation with a religious front.** The Vatican is a secular state of 108 acres, which exchanges ambassadors with the other nations of the earth. The Vatican has diplomatic relations with 196 countries - that is, with 90 percent of the nations of the world. Only a political organisation can do this. No church on earth exchanges ambassadors with the world's nations.

#### ***4. RULED 1260 YEARS***

The seven prophetic verses in the Bible that mention the 1260 year time period are all speaking of the same power which persecutes God's people.

These texts are as follows: Revelation 13:5, Revelation 11:2, Daniel 7:25, Revelation 12:14, Revelation 11:3, Revelation 12:6 and Daniel 12:7.

The key that unlocks the symbolic time prophecies is the principle given in Ezekiel 4:6 and Numbers 14:34. These verses reveal to us that one day in prophecy equals one literal year.

For this reason all symbolic time prophecies must be first broken down into days. Using this Bible "key," time prophecies work out perfectly and become easy to understand.

A month in Bible reckoning contains 30 days. A year contains 360 days. This is the formula for understanding all prophetic time.

In Revelation 11:2 and 12:14, the time period given is "time," "times," and "half a time." This equals  $3\frac{1}{2}$  times. From Daniel 4 we learn that a "time" equals one literal year. In that chapter you'll find that King Nebuchadnezzar lost his mind as Daniel predicted, and crawled around in the field for "seven times." He was in that condition for 7 literal years. So  $3\frac{1}{2}$  times equals  $3\frac{1}{2}$  years ( $3\frac{1}{2}$  years contain 1260 days).

Revelation 11:3 and 12:6 plainly give the time that the beast would persecute God's people, as 1260 days.

Using the day for a year principle found in Ezekiel 4:6 and Numbers 14:34, we see that this power would rule for 1260 years before receiving its "deadly wound."

When we take a look at the beast power, we see that this is exactly what has happened. For God to repeat this time period seven times like this shows the importance which He places on it.

Here are the verses in sequence:

- \* Revelation 11:2 and 13:5 describe this power as reigning for 42 months. (42 months with 30 days to a month contain 1260 days.)
- \* Daniel 7:25 and 12:7, and Revelation 12:14 describe the beast as reigning  $3\frac{1}{2}$  "times," or years. ( $3\frac{1}{2}$  prophetic years also contain 1260 days.)
- \* Revelation 11:3 and 12:6 describe this persecuting power as reigning 1260 days.

All seven texts describe the same length of time – 1260 days. And, as we have observed, 1260 days in symbolic prophecy represents 1260 years. This is the precise length of time that the

papacy ruled supreme, before receiving its deadly wound in 1798.

### **5. THEN RECEIVED "DEADLY WOUND"**

Revelation 13:3 - *"And I saw one of his heads wounded to death."*

From 538 AD the Papacy ruled for exactly 1260 years, until 1798 when something incredible happened. The Pope was taken prisoner! Napoleon's general, Berthier, captured the Pope and took him to France and **the papacy was declared to be abolished – extinct!**

*"The Papacy was extinct: not a vestige of its existence remained; and among all the Roman Catholic powers not a finger was stirred in its defence."* (Rev. George Trevor, Canon of York, *Rome and its Papal Rulers*, p.540)

Just as Bible prophecy foretold, the Papacy had reigned exactly 1260 years. Could it have just been coincidence? Why did Berthier do it?

Napoleon wanted to rule the world. The Papacy stood in his way. I wonder if they knew that they were fulfilling prophecy in spite of themselves!

### **6. THE DEADLY WOUND HEALED**

Revelation 13:3 - *"... and his deadly wound was healed; and all the world wondered after the beast."*

In 1929, the Italian government recognized Vatican City as an independent state. Once again, the Pope was king. On March 9, 1929, he said, "The peoples of the entire world are with us."

The *San Francisco Chronicle* published an account of the pact-signing on the front page of its newspaper. It actually read like this, "*Mussolini and Gaspari Sign Historic Pact . . . **Heal Wound of Many Years.***" That is fantastic! The Bible prophesied that its wound would be healed and the newspaper confirmed it in the exact same words.

## 7. SPEAKS BLASPHEMY

Revelation 13:1,2 - "*And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and **upon his heads the name of blasphemy.***")

The beast has "the name of blasphemy" (Rev. 13:1). What is blasphemy? Again, the Bible gives its own definition:

(a) Blasphemy is for a man to ***claim to be God.*** (John 10:32,33)

(b) Blasphemy is for anyone less than God to ***claim to forgive sins.*** (Mark 2:5-11)

The very leaders of this power would both claim to be God on the earth, and claim to have power to forgive men's sins!

### Daniel's "LITTLE HORN"

1) The "little horn" has the "**eyes of man**". (Dan.7:8)

2) The "little horn" "**wears out the saints** of the Most High." (Dan.7:25)

3) The "little horn" speaks "**great words against the Most High.**" (Dan.7:25)

### Revelation's "BEAST"

The "beast" has the "**number of a man**". Rev.13:18)

The "beast" "**makes war with the saints**". (Rev.13:7)

The "beast" "**opened his mouth in blasphemy against God**".(Rev.13:6)

4) Politically speaking, the "little horn" **comes up among the ten horns. (10 divisions of Rome).** (Dan.7:7,8)

Politically speaking, the "beast" **receives its "power, seat and great authority" from Rome (after the ten divisions were formed).** (Rev.13:2)

5) Continues for 1260 years. (Dan. 7:25)

Continues for 1260 years. (Rev.13:5)

You will observe that the beast of Revelation 13, and the "little horn" of Daniel 7, are identical in character, deeds and duration. **Both are one and the same power!** God wants to make sure that there's no mistaking who this power is, so He describes it in both prophetic books.

Can you think of any world-wide political and religious power with a man at the head of it who claims to be God on earth and to be able to forgive sins? Who received its "seat" and authority from Rome? Of a church government whose leader is "wondered after" by the whole world?

### ***The pope is called "God"***

Revelation 13:1 says that the beast has "the name of blasphemy". It became one of the leading doctrines of the church that its visible head is invested with supreme authority over bishops, pastors and priests in all parts of the world. More than this, he took the very name of God! He was addressed as "Lord God the Pope" and declared to be "infallible."

The following extracts are from authoritative works by Catholic dignitaries concerning the title and position of their leader.

*"All the names which are attributed to Christ in Scripture, implying His supremacy over the church, are also attributed to the Pope."* (Bellamin, "On the Authority of Councils," book 2, Chapter 17)

*"For thou art the shepherd, thou art the physician, thou art the director, thou art the husbandman, finally thou art **another God on earth.**"* (Labbe and Cossart's *History of the Councils*," Vol. XIV, col. 109)

For the title "Lord God the Pope," see a gloss on the *Extravagantes* of Pope John XXII, title 14, chapter 4, *Declaramus*.

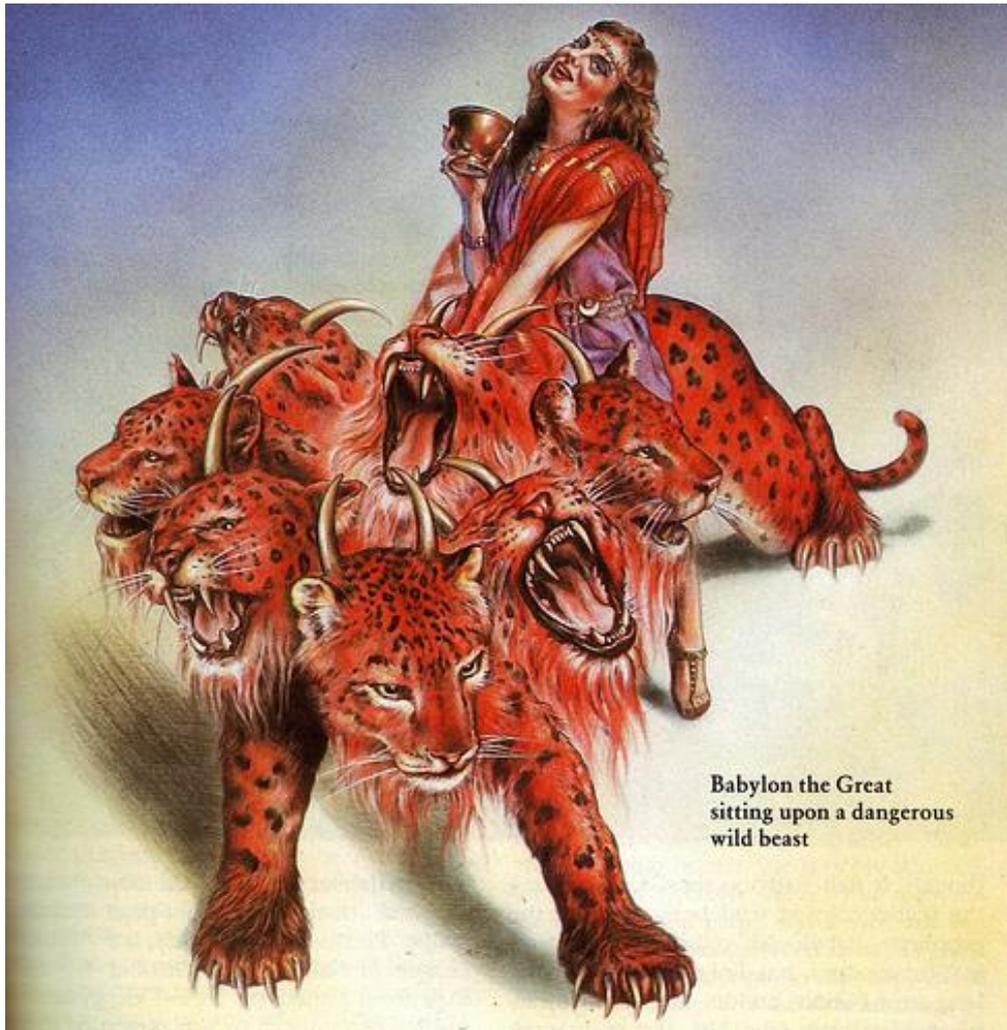
In an Antwerp edition of the *Extravagantes*, the words, "Dominum Deum Nostrum Papam" (Our Lord God the Pope") occur in column 153. In a Paris edition, they occur in column 140.

*"Hence the Pope is crowned with a triple crown, as **king of heaven, and earth, and purgatory.**"* (*Prompta Bibliotheca*," Feraris, Vol. VI, pg. 26, article "Papa")

In a passage which is included in the Roman Catholic Canon Law, Pope Innocent III declares that the Roman pontiff is "the vicegerent upon earth, not of a mere man, but of very **God**;" and in a gloss on the passage it is explained that this is because he is the vicegerent of Christ, Who is "very God and very man." (See *Decretales Domini Gregorii Papae IX* [Decretales of the Lord Pope Gregory IX], *liberi, de translatione Episcoporum*, [on the transference of Bishops], title 7, chapter 3; *Corpus Juris Canonice* (2nd Leipzig ed., 1881), col. 99; [Paris, 1612], tom. 2, *Decretales*, col. 205)

## 8. A "MOTHER" CHURCH

Revelation 17:1-3 - *"And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: . . . and I saw a **woman** sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and **ten horns.**"*



There are those heads and horns again. We've come to associate them with Rome. The Harlot is **controlling Rome**, riding it around - **making her seat on it**. Now it gets even clearer.

A woman in Bible prophecy represents a church. (Jer.6:2; Isa.51:16; 54:5,6; 2 Cor.11:2) A virgin is God's pure church. A harlot (whore) is a corrupt church.

She is called “the **mother** of harlots” (Rev.17:4) – she has daughter churches that play spiritual harlot with her.

In St. Peters in the Vatican, one engraving after another displays Roman Catholicism as a mother, with children clinging to her. Rome is **the only system that uses this symbol**.

*"Other churches are no sisters of ours, the Vatican insists." (The Independent, Sept. 5, 2000)*

*"It must be always clear that the one holy catholic and apostolic universal church is not the sister, but **the mother of all the churches.**" (Cardinal Ratzinger, who later became pope, Sept. 4, 2000)*

## **9. IT IS A WEALTHY ORGANIZATION**

Revelation 17:4 - *"And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls." **It's a rich church.***

## **10. IT IS ALSO A CITY**

Revelation 17:18 - *The Papacy is also "that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth."*

What **church is also a city**? And what city was reigning over the kings of the earth at the time John the apostle wrote the book of Revelation?

Have you heard of the church of (the city of) ROME? Or ROMAN Catholic?

You work it out.

## **11. MAKES WAR WITH THE PEOPLE OF GOD**

Revelation 13:7 - *" And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations."*

Revelation 17:6 - "*... drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus.*"

More people have been murdered by this organization than by any other power in history. Figures given by historians concerning the number of the Vatican's victims range from 50 million to 120 million.

### ***The Bible forbidden***

The 1260 years of the Papacy's rule are called the "Dark Ages." I'm sure you've heard that expression before. The reason it was so dark is because the priests forbade anyone to read or even have a Bible! For hundreds of years only the priests were allowed to read Bibles.

Satan had to get the Bibles away from the people in order to keep them ignorant of the fact that the Church of Rome was pagan and against God. The people just didn't know any better.

There was a time when if you were caught with a Bible, you were dragged out of your home, hung up on a pole, and burned alive in your front yard!

In the Council of Toulouse, the church leaders ruled:

*"We prohibit laymen possessing copies of the Old and New Testament . . . We forbid them most severely to have the above books in the popular vernacular." "The lords of the districts shall carefully seek out the heretics in dwellings, hovels, and forests, and even their underground retreats shall be entirely wiped out." (Concil Tolosanum, Pope Gregory IX, Anno. Chr. 1229)*

The church Council of Tarragona ruled that:

*"No one may possess the books of the Old and New Testaments in the Romance language, and if anyone*

*possesses them he must turn them over to the local bishop within eight days after the promulgation of this decree, so that they may be burned.*" (D. Lortsch, *Histoire de la Bible en France*, 1910, p.14)

After the Bible societies were formed, they were classed with Communism in an amazing decree. On December 8, 1866, Pope Pius IX, in his encyclical *Quanta Cura* issued the following statement:

*"Socialism, Communism, clandestine societies, Bible societies . . . pests of this sort must be destroyed by all means."*

### ***Why did Rome later permit the Bible?***

Why does Rome permit the Bible now?

Briefly, the reason is this. When Roman Catholic priests like Martin Luther and others discovered that the Bible taught salvation by acceptance of God's mercy and that one could go direct to God the Father through Jesus Christ – contrary to what the Church was teaching, half of Europe broke away from the Papacy.

There are two great truths that stand out in the preaching of the Reformers:

- (1) The just shall live by faith (not by the works of Romanism); and
- (2) the Papacy is the Antichrist of Scripture. It was a message FOR Christ and AGAINST Antichrist.

The strength of Protestantism was seen to be the Bible. The **Received Text**, which the Protestants all used, was continuing to shake Europe. It seemed invincible. Tyndale's English Bible in the hands of the common people was already securing Protestantism's grip on England.

The Council of Trent was convened to *plot destruction of the Protestant movement*.

So it was **decided to infiltrate Protestant churches** and promote within them a corrupted Bible to counteract Tyndale's version – one that would more closely mirror Rome's own teachings and weaken Protestantism's stand against Rome. And a Bible commentary – to point people away from the Papacy as the Antichrist and cause them to look off into the future for an unknown individual of the end time. This **theory** was called Futurism.

“Once they would not suffer any man to scarce touch a Bible,” observed Thomas Brightman (1562-1607), “now they produce a commentary to explain it – to point men away from the papal antichrist.”

This policy has continued to this day. It is a major reason for the flood of new Bible versions being released. And wonder of wonders, this Jesuit scheme of interpretation came to be adopted by a growing number of Protestants, and is accepted by many.

This is a cloak and dagger story of tremendous intrigue. If you haven't yet read my explosive book *The Sorcerers' Secret* (from 14 years of painstaking research on the modern Bible versions), may I recommend you get yourself a copy now.

## **12. A WORLD-WIDE POWER**

Revelation 13:8 - "*And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.*"

It is a world-wide power.

Revelation 13:3 - "*All the world* wondered after the beast."

### **13. TAMPERED WITH GOD'S LAW**

First we should be aware of **what the Bible says about God's law:**

Psalm 111:8 - *“All his commandments are sure. They stand fast for ever and ever.”*

Romans 7:12; 8:7 - *“Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good... The carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.”*

Matthew 5:18,19 - *“Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven, but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.”*

You notice, Jesus Himself says that the law of God must never be changed, **will never really be changed!** Only God can change God's law. But Bible prophecy says that the religious power which would emerge in Rome after the demise of the Roman Empire would think itself able to change God's law!

Daniel 7:25 - *“He shall think to change times and laws [of God].”*

You ask the papacy, Did you change God's law?” The answer is, “Of course we did! Who else would dare?” Notice:

*“The Pope has power to change times, to abrogate laws, and to dispense with all things, even the precepts of Christ.”* (Decretal, de translation Episcop. Cap)

Compare the prophecy "He shall think *to change times and laws*" with the claim: "The Pope has power *to change times, to abrogate laws.*" What a fulfilment!

QUESTION: But how has this been done?

ANSWER: The second of the ten commandments, which forbids bowing down to graven images, Rome totally cut out. So the third command now became the second, and the fourth now became the third, and so on.

But, since this left only nine, Rome split the tenth command (about coveting) into two. so as to have ten again.

And most of the new third commandment, identifying which day is the Lord's holy Sabbath - and why it is - Rome has eliminated. And, would you believe, Rome boasts about this act:

*“Q. What is the Third Commandment?*

*A. The Third Commandment is, ‘Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day.’*

*Q. Which is the Sabbath day?*

*A. Saturday is the Sabbath day.*

*Q. Why do we observe Sunday instead of Saturday?*

*A. We observe Sunday instead of Saturday, because the **Catholic Church**, in the Council of Laodicea (A.D. 336), transferred the solemnity **from Saturday to Sunday.***

*(Convert’s Catechism of Catholic Doctrine, p.49. This has received the apostolic blessing of Pope Pius X.)*

*“Protestants... accept Sunday rather than Saturday as the day of public worship after the Catholic Church made the change... But the Protestant mind does not seem to realize that in accepting the Bible, **in observing the Sunday, they are accepting the authority of... the Pope.**” (Our Sunday Visitor, Roman Catholic, February 5, 1950)*

*“**The Bible says, ‘Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day.’ The Catholic Church says, No! by my***

*divine power I abolish the Sabbath day, and command you to keep holy the first day of the week. And, lo! The entire civilized world bows down in reverent obedience to the command of the holy Catholic Church.*” (Father Enright, President of Redemptorist College – R.C.)

*"Ques. – When Protestants do profane work [regular employment] upon Saturday, or the seventh day of the week, do they follow the Scripture as their only rule of faith – do they find this permission clearly laid down in the Sacred Volume?*

*“Ans. – On the contrary, they have only the authority of [Catholic] tradition for this practice. In profaning Saturday, they violate **one of God’s commandments, which He has never abrogated.**”* (Father Stephen Keenan, A Doctrinal Catechism, pp. 252,254 – widely used in Roman Catholic schools)

Did you notice that? It is admitted that God Himself NEVER CANCELLED this commandment - which so many Christians now violate, many of them unsuspectingly.

#### **14. RULED BY A MAN WHOSE NUMBER IS 666**

The Pope's official title, bestowed on him at his coronation, is "Vicarius Filii Dei" which means "Vicar of the Son of God." The letters of this name which he takes add up precisely to the number **666**.

It is no use saying that some other power or system could be meant because the letters of its name likewise add up to 666. By the laws of evidence, ALL of the above fourteen specifications in the Bible prophecy must match. One or two isolated points prove nothing. **EVERY specification must line up.**

To dispel all doubt about the identity of the man who receives this number, we shall devote all of the next chapter to this specification.

Here again are *the main clues* from the Bible:

1. Receives its "seat" and authority from Rome. (Revelation 13:2)
2. Has the characteristics of the previous world powers (Revelation 13:1. Compare with Daniel 7:3-7)
3. Is both a political and a religious power, involving worship. (Revelation 13:4)
4. Rules the world for 1260 years (from 538 AD to 1798 AD).
5. Then receives a "deadly wound". (Revelation 13:3).
6. The "deadly wound" is healed. (Revelation 13:3)
7. Its leader claims to be God on the earth and to be able to forgive sins (which is blasphemy). (Revelation 13:5; 17:3)
8. Is a mother church (daughters have come out of her). (Revelation 17:5)
9. It is a wealthy organization. (Revelation 17:4)
10. It is a city. (Revelation 17:18)
11. Persecutes the people of God - the saints. (Revelation 13:7)
12. Is a world power which is wondered at. (Revelation 13:3,4)
13. Has tampered with God's law. (Daniel 7:25)
14. Has "a man" at the head of it with the number of his name (title) being 666. (Revelation 13:18,17)

Once again, this is not to attack any ordinary person who may have been born into the system. And it is not I who am saying these things. The God of heaven, who loves every single person, is giving this and the other identification points. I want to be quick to say that when a person shares this shocking revelation, he must be kind and tactful. We must let people know that God loves all. The truth must be told - but always in kindness.

By now you will know, from the Bible, the identity of this power. There is only one power on the face of the earth that fits all of these fourteen Bible characteristics for it.

It is fitting that the largest and most influential political and religious power in all history - which has had more interaction with the people of God than any other in history - should be mentioned so much in Bible prophecy. In fact, wouldn't it be out of character for the Bible to be silent about it?

A close relationship with our precious Saviour will enable us to stand firm for Jesus and His law and endure patiently until the end, just as He endured on the Cross for you and me.

### **He dies alone**

In that darkness on the cross, as He died for you and me, Jesus was alone.

And what anguish! He was giving up everything - his heavenly home, his own Father, even life itself — for them. The sneering ones around the cross — he loved them still. But where were his disciples?

The prophet Daniel had said it all (Daniel 9:26): he was to die "not for himself", but for others — "and shall have nothing" — no people, no place, no recognition, no kingdom, no followers. Not even his clothes. Stripping him naked was the ultimate shame. Deprived of everything.

Through long hours of agony, Jesus had been gazed upon by the jeering crowd. But now, while he drank the last dregs of the cup of divine displeasure, he was mercifully hidden from the gaze of the curious crowd, by the mantle of darkness. The silence of the grave seemed to have fallen upon the countryside. Breathless heat. The stillness of earthquake weather.

A nameless terror gripped the crowd that was gathered. The cursing ceased. Some trembled.

The darkness persisted. Lightning occasionally flashed, illuminating the cross and the victim. At first, priests, executioners and the mob began to wonder if their time of judgment had come.

Eventually, some regained their composure and moved out. Others remained, speaking in whispers. An undeniable dread was upon each mind. The overspreading darkness was as unaccountable as it was frightening.

A woman was heard to exclaim, "This is his power! He has produced this miracle."

"Perhaps we'll see him come down from the cross," breathed another.

A few more attempted to grope their way back to the city.

And now only the soldiers remained close to the cross, duty-bound to stay. As well as those who most loved Jesus.

The two thieves were heard sobbing, then muttering in delirium as the high fever of great pain muddled their minds.

But from the centre cross came only silence.

In the darkness Jesus was alone. He was passing through the deepest and most dreadful part of his agony. So great was the anguish that his physical pain was hardly felt.

The dreadful thought was pressing upon him, "Even your Father in heaven won't want you now. All this guilt you have chosen to take upon yourself has doomed you. You are finished."

Throughout his life Jesus had been telling people the good news of his Father's mercy and pardoning love. Salvation even for the worst of sinners, he had said. But now, with the terrible guilt he was bearing, he could not see the Father's forgiving face.

How the divine Father must have suffered with His Son! One can imagine Him pressing close in the darkness, longing to intervene. But He must hold back and let the penalty be paid. What a price was paid for your rescue and mine! The Innocent were the victims.

Jesus, the sin-bearer, endured the wrath of divine justice against sin. Now, as God strikes sin, He strikes His own Son. The guilt of every wrong committed on this planet presses upon his soul. In the place of the wrongdoer, the Son of God suffers the penalty.

Alone Jesus endures this anguish to save us from it. He feels the black despair which the lost rejecter of rescue will feel on the final judgment day... the torment of separation from one's Creator... the torment of the damned, when they realize that, by their own choice, they are God-forsaken and lost forever.

"My God, my God" — Jesus' cry pierces the darkness — "why have you forsaken me?" (Matthew 27:46).

Since eternity they have been together — closer than Siamese twins. Throughout his life on earth, every morning while it was still dark, Jesus has been rising to spend hours with his Father, to gain strength in prayer for his work among humans.

Now, in the darkness, it seems that even his heavenly Father has deserted him. The hope of rising from the tomb a conqueror now seems a distant illusion. Despair tells him that his separation from his Father will be permanent.

Now it appears that he is going down to a grave from which there will be no resurrection. So that these men and women around the cross can receive the joy of life in a new world and the company of the Father, he himself must give up life forever.

"My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"

Unutterable anguish fills his soul at the hiding of his Father's face because of the world's sin upon him.

The Rescuer's heart breaks with that cry. He has borne all that even he can bear.

He was counted a law-breaker, that he might release us from the penalty of the law. The guilt of every person since Adam was pressing upon his heart. It was this sense of sin, which he was bearing as man's substitute — it was the terrible revealing of God's displeasure against sin, which made Jesus' suffering so bitter, and crushed out the life of the Son of God.

I have reflected deeply on the implications of this for me personally.

Rescue was that day purchased for me by the suffering and death of the Son of God. But He arose from the dead, guaranteeing your resurrection and mine.

The gift of rescue can be mine — and yours — to accept gratefully. But no one is compelled to yield. If I disregard it, that's my choice — and at the end I shall receive my wages. I will have lost a life of eternal happiness for the fleeting pleasures of the sin disease now.

What value our Creator has placed upon each person!

In the days ahead, each of us will be personally challenged by events. His promise to us is:

Revelation 3:21 - *"He that overcometh will I grant to sit*

*with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.”*

Matthew 24:13 - *“He that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.”*

Revelation 22:14 - *“Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the [holy] city.”*

Time is running out. History is closing. Are you ready?

\* \* \* \* \*



Inside the Vatican is this picture of a cherub tearing the book of Daniel out of the Bible. Why? Because Rome hates the book of Daniel in particular. It is this book which provides the key to unlock the truth concerning the identity of the "beast", the Antichrist power.

## 30

# THE MAN WITH THE NUMBER 666

*"Here is wisdom. He that hath understanding, let him count the number of the beast. For it is a the number of a man: and the number of him is six hundred sixty-six." (Revelation 13:17,18)*

## THE NUMBER 666

The note below Revelation 13:18 in the Douay, or Roman Catholic, Bible says: *"Six hundred sixtysix. The numeral letters of his name shall make up this number."*

The title of the Pope in Rome is *Vicarius Filii Dei*. This is

- \* the pope's official title, bestowed upon him when he is crowned. It is also
- \* inscribed on his mitre
- \* inscribed over the door of the Vatican.

The final attribute of the first beast of Revelation 13 beast is that it has a number, and this number is the number of a man.

We must remember that this attribute is **not** the most important, but is rather just a small piece of the description Scripture gives of this beast.

## NOT A COMPUTER

A popular misunderstanding of this prophecy applies the 666 to a computer in Brussels. This implies that 666 represents registration of every citizen of Earth who is to be subjected to the new economic policies of the new world order.

However, this computer

- \* did not **persecute the saints of God for 1260 years.**
- \* It did not **say it was God.**
- \* And, it does not **claim to forgive sins.**

These are all attributes of the Antichrist.

Before we can call any entity the Antichrist, we must be sure that it **fulfills every description that the Bible gives.**

The text clearly states that the number is the number of a man (the supreme ruler of that kingdom), bringing it in line with the "man of sin" recorded in 2 Thessalonians 2.

And if you take the letters of his title which represent Latin numerals and add them together they come precisely to **666.**

## **ROMAN CATHOLIC AUTHORITIES**

In our examination of this subject we shall first consult Roman Catholic authorities to ascertain what sacred title they apply to the pope to denote his official position and authority. Any one at all familiar with authentic Catholic authors knows that their paramount and constant claim for the pope is that Christ appointed St. Peter to be His vicar, or representative on earth, and that each succeeding pope is the lawful successor of St. Peter, and is therefore the "**Vicar of the Son of God**" on earth. This official title in Latin (the official language of the Catholic Church) is "**Vicarius Filii Dei.**"

We find this title used officially in Roman Catholic canon law, from medieval times down to the present. In the earliest collection of canon law we read:

"Beatus Petrus in tetris **Vicarius Filii Dei** videtur esse constitutus"— *Decretum Gratiani*, prima pars, dist. xcvi.  
Translated into English this would read: "Blessed Peter is seen to have been constituted **vicar of the Son of God** on the earth."

(*Decretum of Gratian*, part 1, div. 96, column 472, first published at Bologna about 1148, and reprinted in 1555. Translation by Christopher B. Coleman, Ph.D., in *The Treatise of Lorenzo Valla on the Donation of Constantine*, p. 13. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1922)

*The Catholic Encyclopedia* says of Gratian: "He is the true founder of the science of canon law" (Vol. VI, art. "Gratian," p. 730)

The same Catholic authority says: "The 'Decretum' of Gratian was considered in the middle of the twelfth century as a corpus juris canonici, i.e. a code of the ecclesiastical law then in force." (*Ibid.*, Vol. IV, art. "Decretals," p. 671)

In this canon law, which Pope Gregory XIII had corrected by "the plenitude of the apostolic power," so that it is "entirely freed from faults," we find the same statement: "Beatus Petrus in terris **vicarius Filii Dei** esse videtur constitutus." ("Corpus Juris Canonici, Gregorii XIII, Ponif. Max. Auctoritate," Distinctio 96, Column 286, Canon Constantinus 14, Magdeburg, 1747)

In "Corpus Juris Canonici Emendatum et Notis Illustratum Gregorii XIII. Pont. Max.," "Lvgdvn, MDCXXII," or "the Canon Law of Pope Gregory XIII, of 1622," with the Pope's own "Preface," in which he assures us of its being without flaw, we find the same: "Beatus Petrus in terris **Vicarius Filii Dei** esse videtur constitutus" (Column 295)

We cannot see how any consistent Roman Catholic can deny the authenticity of this title without denying the infallibility of the pope. What more authority can they desire?

Again, let us apply the rule laid down in the Roman Catholic Bible for counting the number of his name. It says:

*"The numeral letters of his name shall make up this number."*—  
Note under a Revelation 13:18.

The next Roman Catholic authority we shall quote is F. Lucii Ferraris, who wrote "*a veritable encyclopedia*" in Latin, of which several editions have been printed by the papal church at Rome. The *American Catholic Encyclopedia* says of Ferraris's

great work that it "*will ever remain a precious mine of information*" (Vol. VI, p. 48)

From this unquestionable Roman Catholic authority we shall first quote its Latin statement, and then give the English translation:

"Ut sicu! Beatus Petrus in tetris **vicarius Filii Dei** fuit constitutus, ita et Pontifices eius successores in tetris principatus potestatem amplius, quam terrenae imperialis nostrae serenitatis mansuetudo habere videtur." ("As the blessed Peter was constituted **Vicar of the Son of God** on earth, so it is seen that the Pontiffs, his successors, hold from us and our empire the power of a supremacy on the earth greater than the clemency of our earthly imperial serenity.") (*Prompta Bibliotheca canonica juridica moralis theologica* etc., Vol. VI, art. "Papa," p. 43. Printed by the Press of the Propaganda, Rome; 1890)

Henry Edward Cardinal Manning of England, an extensive Roman Catholic writer, of high esteem in his church, applies the same title to the popes: "It was a dignified obedience to bow to the **Vicar of the Son of God**, and to remit the arbitration of their griefs to one whom all wills consented to obey" (*The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ*, pp. 231,232, second edition. London: Burns and Lambert, 1862)

The same year, this book was translated and published in Italian, with the sanction of the church attached to it. The title "**Vicar of the Son of God**" appears on pages 234 and 235 of that edition.

Philippe Labbe, "a distinguished Jesuit writer on historical, geographical, and philological questions" (*Catholic Encyclopedia*, Vol. VIII, pp. 718, 719), in his historical work *Sacrosancta concilia ad regiam editionem exacta*, Vol. I, page 1534 (Paris:1671), uses "**Vicarius Filii Dei**" as the official title of the pope.

The April 18, 1915 issue of *Our Sunday Visitor* (Roman Catholic), of Huntington, Ind., in its issue of April 18, 1915, gives clear testimony in this case:



Later, when Roman Catholic authorities discovered that Protestants were making use of the foregoing statements to identify the Papacy with the antichristian power of Revelation 13:18, they attempted to repudiate the contents of their former article. But that article was not written by some contributor to their paper; it appeared in the "Bureau of Information," for which the editorial staff was responsible. And on page two of that paper appeared sanctions for the editor from Pope Pius X, dated May 17, 1914; from the Apostolic Delegate, John Bonzano, dated April 27, 1913; and from J. H. Alerding, Bishop of Fort Wayne, Ind., dated March 29, 1912.

If statements made under such high authorities are not trustworthy, we would respectfully ask if their present denials are any more so?

*Our Sunday Visitor* in the aforementioned quotation makes use of **Vicarius Filii Dei** and "**Vicar of Christ**" as synonymous terms, and Cardinal Manning does the same in his book, *Temporal Power of the Pope*. This pure, dignified, Latin title, **Vicarius Filii Dei** has been in use among them for centuries.

## **TESTIMONY OF EYE-WITNESSES**

That the title, **Vicarius Filii Dei**, has been employed elsewhere than in Roman Catholic canon law is also asserted by ex-Roman Catholic priest Rev. B. Hoffman:

"To Whom It May Concern:

"This is to certify that I was born in Bavaria in 1828, was educated in Munich, and was reared a Roman Catholic. In 1844 and 1845 I was a student for the priesthood in the Jesuit College in Rome.

"During the Easter service of 1845, Pope Gregory XVI wore a **triple crown** upon which was the inscription, in jewels,

**Vicarius Filii Dei.** We were told that there were one hundred diamonds in the word Dei; the other words were of some other kind of precious stones of a darker color. There was one word upon each crown, and not all on the same line. I was present at the service, and saw the crown distinctly, and noted it carefully... Some deny that the pope ever wore this tiara. But I know that he did, for I saw it upon his head."

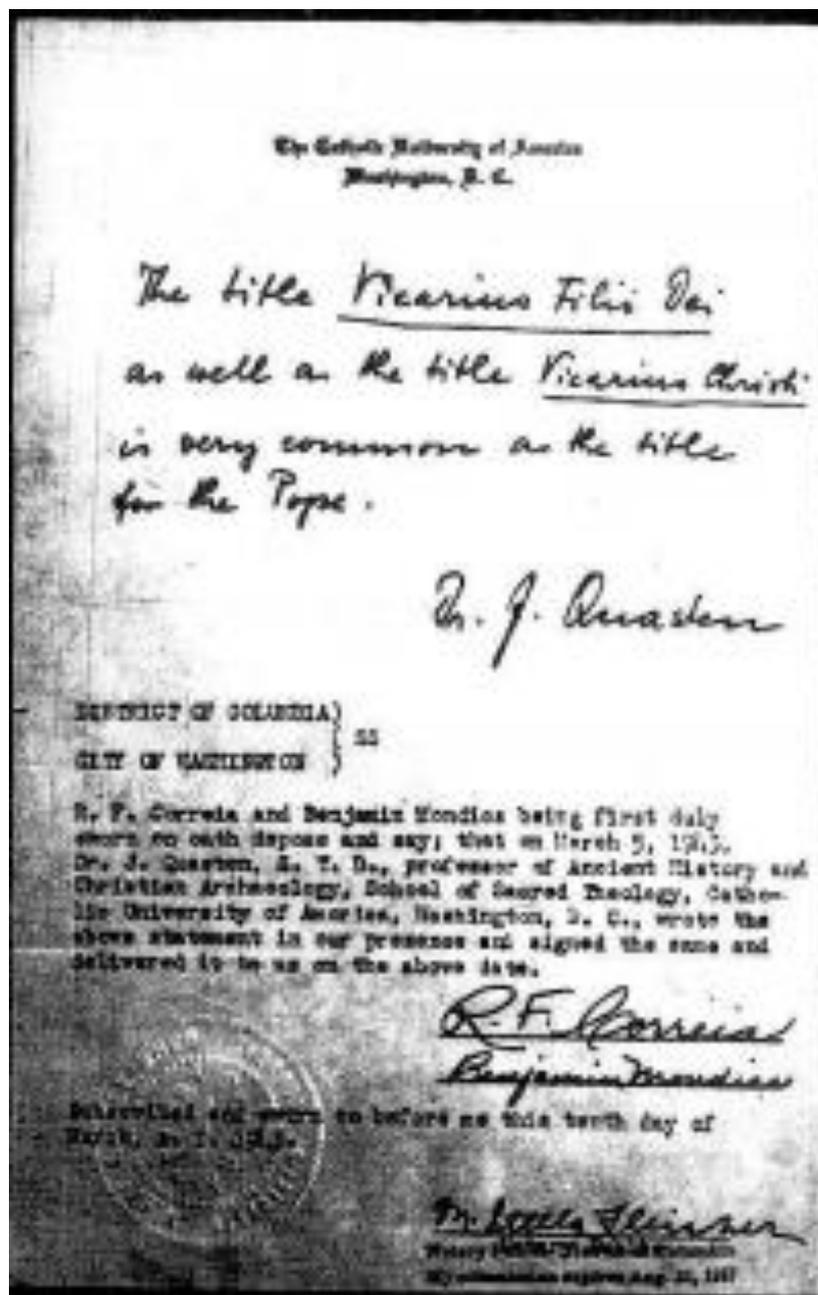
"(Signed) "B. Hoffman.  
"Webb City, Mo., Oct. 29, 1906."

The title, **vicarius filii dei**, which the Popes of Rome have assumed to themselves, and caused to be **inscribed over the door of the Vatican**, exactly makes the number of 666, when deciphered according to the numeral signification of its constituent letters. ('U' and 'V' have the same value. Look in your encyclopedia under "Alphabet"). Now let's add it up:

V.....	5
I .....	1
C.....	100
A.....	0
R.....	0
I .....	1
V.....	5
S .....	0
F .....	0
I .....	1
L .....	50
I .....	1
I .....	1
D.....	500
E .....	0
I .....	1
TOTAL.....	666"

Below is handwritten proof that the Roman Catholic system uses the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* to describe the Pope. This was written and signed by Professor J. Quasten, Professor of Ancient History and Christian Archaeology, Catholic University of America, Washington, D.C., on March 5, 1943:

*"The title Vicarius Filii Dei as well as the title Vicarius Christi is very common as the title of the pope. Dr. J. Quasten"*



Mr. H. S. Weaver, of Baltimore, Md., wrote to James Cardinal Gibbons, of the same city, under date of January 18, 1904, inquiring:

"Does the inscription, '**Vicarius Filii Dei,**' appear on the crown or mitre of the pope, or has it at any time in the past appeared on the crowns or mitres of any of the popes?"

"Yours sincerely, (Signed) "H. S. Weaver."

To this the Cardinal answered through his secretary:

"Baltimore, Md., Jan. 26, 1904.

"Mr. H. S. Weaver.

"Dear Sir:

"In reply to yours of 18th inst., I beg to say that I can not say with certainty that the words, '**Vicarius Filii Dei,**' are on the pope's tiara. But **the words are used by the cardinal who imposes the tiara at the coronation of a pope.**

"Yours truly, (Signed) "Wm. T. Russell, Secretary."

The *New Catholic Dictionary* says:

"Tiara, papal crown .... It is placed on his head at his Coronation by the second cardinal-deacon, with the words: 'Receive the tiara adorned with three crowns and know that thou art Father of princes and kings, Ruler of the world, **Vicar of our Saviour Jesus Christ**' (*The New Catholic Dictionary*, art. "Tiara," p. 955)

The important part is NOT that the inscription **Vicarius Filii Dei** is on the pope's tiara, but that it is **the official title** of the popes, that it designates their official position, and is given to them at their coronation, just as the head of the United States government is called "President," without it therefore being necessary for him to wear that title on his hat.

The Romans everywhere used Latin, all their laws were written in that language, and Latin has remained the official language of the Papacy to this day. The apostle was prophesying of a strictly

Latin power, whose language was in use in his day, and it is quite common for Bible writers to borrow foreign words and phrases belonging to the subjects of which they are speaking. (John 19:20; Revelation 9:11; 16:16.)

It is no use saying that some other power or system could be meant, simply because the letters of its name also add up to 666. By the laws of evidence, ALL specifications in the Bible prophecy must match. One or two isolated points on their own prove nothing. **EVERY specification must line up.**

Then, too, the power represented by Revelation 13:1-10, 17, 18, must not only have the name indicated, but *must also fulfill all the other specifications in this prophecy*, and the Papacy does this.

Once again, this is not to attack any ordinary person who may have been born into the system. And it is not I who am saying these things. The God of heaven, who loves every single person, is giving this and the other identification points. I want to be quick to say that when a person shares this shocking revelation, he must be kind and tactful. We must let people know that God loves all. The truth must be told - but always in kindness.

# 31

## ROME CONTROLS ALL KEY ORGANIZATIONS

If you didn't know, Rome **stands alone above ALL** other powers on earth.

As Catholic priest D. S. Phelan once profoundly declared:

*“The pope is the ruler of the world. All the emperors, all the kings, all the princes, all the presidents of the world are as these altar boys [acolytes] of mine.”* (D. S. Phelan, *Western Watchman*, June 27, 1912.)

Listen to one of our best modern historians:

*“No political event or circumstance can be evaluated without the knowledge of the Vatican’s part in it. And no significant world situation exists in which the Vatican does not play an important explicit or implicit role.”* (Avro Manhattan, 1960 *The Vatican And World Politics*)

Did you know? **Rome is the SINGLE DRIVING FORCE behind every major world event** – and most, if not all, of these other organizations.

Its primary aim of world rulership is now almost within reach. This political power’s “Christian-looking” front has the world mesmerised. Its public relations has been so successful that when most people think of “Christianity” or even “religion”, this organization comes to mind.

And modern critics of Christianity have fallen for the trick. They see its 80 pagan features tagged with the name of “Jesus”. So they jump to the conclusion that Jesus himself is just another

item of “recycled paganism”. These writers may sound scholarly. But their research is pathetically shallow. Critics, wake up! Get to know your history!

Is Christianity recycled paganism? Well, you know the answer to that. But the Lucifer Legion have done their job well. Just be sure you understand the difference between pure Christianity and Romanism. That’s your key. It will explain so much! (For evidence, see my books *Stolen Identity* and *Welcome, Then Betrayal*.)

## Lucifer or the Creator

Rome’s Jesuits have successfully infiltrated or control all key world organizations.

The Supreme Jesuit General is “*in command of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta, Scottish-Rite Shriner Freemasonry, the Knights of Columbus, B’nai B’rith [Jewish Masonry], the Nation of Islam, the Mafia, Opus Dei, and the Ku Klux Klan, along with a host of lesser Brotherhoods.*” (*Saturday Evening Post*, January 17, 1959)

Whether it be the CIA, the Federal Reserve Bank, the Bank of America, the FBI, KGB, FEMA, Freemasonry, Mossad, German BND, the British SIS, or M16, the top is invested with Jesuits (Jonathan Gray, *Welcome, Then Betrayal*, 2008, pp.155-157,170-179,207-216), as are the New World Order, the New Age movement, the Trilateral Commission, the C.F.R., the Illuminati, UFOism, the world’s governments, the judiciary, military, universities, the pharmaceutical industry, sports and entertainment industries – Rome is pulling the strings. She has the best intelligence service on the planet.

The top leaders in the various Jesuit infiltrated religions, as well as leaders of nations, are high Masons – who take orders secretly from the highest Mason who wears the ephod – the Pope. They are the “intelligent people” called “esoterics”. By

the time they get that far in their training, they know that they are really following Lucifer. The well-meaning members who have joined at the lower levels (whom the “esoterics” mockingly call “catechumen” = human cattle) do their chosen “good works”, unaware that their respective organizations are set up to follow Lucifer.

The heads of **Rome**, the heads of **Masonry**, and the heads of the **Church of Satan** are basically of the same religion worshipping the same god, **Lucifer**. In acknowledgement of this, the top men all give the same two-horned-fingers satanic hand signal.



Ordinary honest people in “the one true faith” are lulled into acceptance by hearing “Jesus” words, seeing “holy” pictures, and kissing images of saints. When they wake up and discover what this is really all about, there will be a perfect storm!

The Reformation warning **needs to be revived and shouted** from the rooftops more now than at any time in history. **Rome is returning to world domination – over all religions.**

Prophecy says that God’s servants will strongly expose this system. In fact, this will be the core of God’s final message to the world. It will be shouted:

*“...mightily with a strong voice, saying...Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.”*

(Revelation 17:4,5 ; 18:1-4)

God’s servants will **NOT tone this down**. We are called to wage a continuous war, at the risk of imprisonment, of losing property and even life itself, to defend the law of God, which is being made void by the laws of the Papacy.

No, the issue is NOT just a whole lot of different organizations. God is shouting to us about ONE CHIEF PLAYER, **who controls them all**. That player is Rome.

**Rome is the SINGLE DRIVING FORCE** behind every major world event affecting God’s people.

**This is not about individual Catholic people**

We should understand from the outset that Roman Catholics are not the problem. Many of the Jesuits are not even the problem. The Catholic people know NOTHING of what's going on. If

they did, there would be a march on the Vatican establishments tomorrow.

The Book of Revelation shows that there are many sincere individuals in the Roman Catholic organization (see Revelation 14:7; 18:4). God does not condemn such ones. In fact, He calls them "*My people*". He loves them. And so do I. My dear wife came from them. The problem is not the people. It is the system.

The Jesuit General is the absolute, complete, and total dictator of the Order. When he speaks, his provincials move. The provincials are his major subordinates. There are around 90 provincials right now. The Jesuit Order has divided the world into about 90 regions. For each region, there is a Jesuit provincial. There are 10 provincials in the United States.

### ***JESUITS MANIPULATE THE WHOLE WORLD***

The Jesuit General exercises full and complete power over the Order. He meets with his provincials. When they decide to start a war, he gets the information from the provincial of that country, how best to go about this, the demeanor of the people, and then he uses legitimate grievances - like the 1964 Civil Rights Movement, to foam an agitation. That was ALL a Jesuit agitation. The end result was more consolidation of power in Washington with the 1964 Civil Rights Act. That Act was written by Notre Dame President Rev. Theodore Hesburgh.

The Jesuit General **rules the world** through his provincials. And the provincials then, of course, rule the lower Jesuits, and there are many Jesuits who are not "professed" (Professed = taking the Luciferian blood oath).

Most of the lower Jesuits have no idea what's going on at the top. They have no concept of the power of their Order.

It's just like Freemasonry, the lower degrees have no idea that the High Shriner Freemasons are working for the Jesuit General. They think that they're just doing works and being good people.

But the bottom line is that the high-level Freemasons are subject, also, to the Jesuit General. The Jesuit General, with Fredrick the Great, wrote the High Degrees, the last 8 Degrees, of the Scottish Rite Freemasonry when Fredrick protected them from the Pope in 1773.

The Jesuit Order, and the most powerful Freemason they had in the craft, Fredrick the Great, were working together. The French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars were carried out by Freemasonry. Everything Napoleon did, and the Jacobins, whatever they did, advanced the agenda of the Jesuit Order.

The Jesuit Order has no women. They have no love of a woman because that could lead you to allegiance to your wife and family, and could effect your absolute obedience to the General. That's why, although their trained infiltrating agents will marry, they themselves will NEVER be married, and that's one of the great KEYS to their success. (This is referred to in Daniel 11:37.)

### ***INFILTRATION IS COMPLETE***

There is no doubt that Rome's orders and agents are now strategically placed throughout the highest levels of power.

They can betray a nation and walk away. They can betray us in Vietnam and walk away. They can betray us every time we go to the hospital and get radiated and cut and drugged, and walk away. Their **ultimate goal is the rule of the world**, with the pope of their making, **from** Solomon's rebuilt Temple in **Jerusalem**. That's their ultimate goal.

## ***SPORT AND AMUSEMENTS***

Rome's Jesuits are in control of virtually everything. Jesuits set up and control the Knights of Malta. The High Knights are good, dear brothers with the High Mafia Dons—the Gambinos, the Lucchese, the Columbos, all of them.

The Jesuits are the ones behind professional sports. The owner of the Pittsburgh Steelers is a Knight of Malta. The owner of the Detroit Lions is a Knight of Malta. All your top owners of these ball clubs, for the most part, are Knights of Malta, getting the people whooped up in this hoopla over games and sports, while they're busy preparing a tyranny. And this part of their game plan is written in the *Protocols*—that they would create “amusements” to **divert the public's attention, while Rome secretly manipulates her way to power.**

Another one they used was Walt Disney, a 33<sup>rd</sup> degree Freemason with his Disneyworld, and Disneyland. They create all of these amusements and games and pastimes to get the people drunk with pleasure, while they're busy dismantling the Protestant biblical form of government.

It's the Jesuits who control Hollywood, not the Jews. It is only Jews who are front-men, that is the Jesuit way. Jews who are involved in Hollywood and working for the Mafia and for the Cardinal.

## ***WARS AND MASSACRES***

The wars of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries, including their massacres of the Serbs, the Jews and others, are all attributable to the Jesuits. (Edmond Paris, *The Secret History of the Jesuits and The Vatican Against Europe*)

## ***THE NAZI S.S.***

The Jesuits used the S.S. to kill the Jews in Europe. In Russia,

the Jesuits followed with the S.S. and purged Western Russia of all its Jews. That is why Jesuit-trained Stalin deliberately killed 40,000 of his best officers. That is why he kicked out his best generals, purged them, because he wanted to make sure that the Red Army would lose with the advance of the German army. He knew that following that would come the S.S. and purge Russia of the Jews that Stalin so hated.

### ***THE CIA AND INTELLIGENCE AGENCIES***

It was Rome's Knights of Malta who financed Hitler. They were behind Operation Paperclip (led by J. Peter Grace) which in the late 40s and 1950s brought over 2,000 top German Nazis and scientists to the United States.

The CIA was set up by the Knights of Malta using Allen Dulles, the Vatican point man who had helped organize the funding of Hitler. One of the founders of the CIA was "Wild" Bill Donovan, an Irish Roman Catholic, whose brother was a Dominican priest, Vincent.

The Jesuits had brought in all of their top Nazi S.S. soldiers into the CIA.

Then, in the late 1970s and early 1980s, a massive electronic intelligence gathering network was set up to collect banking and financial data, worldwide. The network was headquartered in Toronto Canada.

Ptech software was installed on the computer systems of every government agency connected with Sept 11<sup>th</sup> – including the White House, the FAA, and NORAD. It is frightening to contemplate that Ptech software has the ability to override data and command procedures within NORAD and FAA systems – and even the White House.

Today, Ptech software allows control, override of normal

procedures and change of data on the systems it is “monitoring”. Put simply, this means that, undetected, outsiders could override government orders at crucial times.

The Jesuit General is in complete control of the international intelligence community. Understand that the Jesuit General controls the CIA, the FBI, the KGB, the Israeli Mossad, the German BND, the British SIS. The Jesuit General is in COMPLETE CONTROL of the entire intelligence apparatus, FBI, every bureaucratic agency in America, all of it. He is in complete control of it.

The CIA, then, is actually the Catholic Intelligence Agency - and it is financed by drugs sold on the streets of America's big cities.

When the USSR invaded Afghanistan in late 1979, the CIA trained Muslims to fight the Communists. Among the organizations established by the Catholic Intelligence Agency were Al-Qaeda and an offshoot of Al-Qaeda called ISIS. The papacy created these groups to stop Communism.

Today the papacy is using them in Europe, the Middle East, and increasingly in the USA. Rome created ISIS and is using ISIS today as a smokescreen to hide her own moves. So the world unites daily in a common stance against the supposed villain, ISIS!

### ***WAS THE VATICAN BEHIND 9/11?***

The whole world watched the results of that control on Sept 11, 2001 – and learnt soon afterwards of the heavy German involvement in the futures trading in airline and insurance stocks just prior to the attacks.

Early on the morning of 9/11, shortly after Bush took off on Air force One from Florida, without any fighter escort, “*the Secret*

*Service received an anonymous message saying, ‘Air Force One is next.’ The caller spoke in the code words [known only to the agency’s staff] relating to Air Force One procedures.”* (Webster Griffin Tarpley, *9-11 Synthetic Terror: Made in USA*. Joshua Tree, CA: Progressive, 2005,2006, p.279)

They put Bush through the wringer with threats of a missile coming at Air Force One, and the threat of destruction of his ranch at Crawford, Texas.

The threat was made that if George Bush refused to launch the war of civilizations (against Islam), the plotters were in a position to do it on their own in a much more sweeping manner, by launching a US nuclear strike against a series of Arab and Islamic capitals. ([www.reseauvoltaire.net](http://www.reseauvoltaire.net), September 27, 2001)

*“The security of the top American leaders is no longer guaranteed and the enemies of America are able to usurp the identity of President Bush, including to order a nuclear launch.”* (*Ibid.*)

*“American code words were used showing a knowledge of procedures that made the threat credible.... How did they get the code-word information and transponder know-how that established their mala fides?”* (*New York Times*, September 13, 2001)

It was noted that the code name of Air Force One is changed daily, and that the message threatening Air Force One was transmitted in that day’s top-secret White House code words. *“Angel is next.”* That was the code word for Air Force One for that day.

*In fact, they “were picking up and deciphering the presidential plane’s incoming and outgoing transmissions... The discovery shocked everyone in the president’s emergency operations center... Their first question was: How did the terrorists access top-secret White House codes and procedures? Is there a mole, or*

*more than one enemy spy in the White House, the Secret Service, the FBI, the CIA, or the Federal aviation administration?*

*“The terrorists had also obtained the code groups of the National Security Agency and were able to penetrate the NSA’s state-of-the-art electronic surveillance systems. Indeed, they seem to have at their disposal an electronic capability that was more sophisticated than that of the NSA.”* (Tarpley, pp.295,296)

**Just join the dots.** Linking the Vatican Nazi-founded computer companies with access to America’s daily changed security codes, tells us everything.

Always, *always*, remember that Rome possesses **the finest intelligence in the world – bar none.**

If you want to know who was behind 9/11, read Revelation 18:23,24. Note that word in verse 24: “**ALL** that were slain upon the earth.” You know what **ALL** means, and God cannot lie.

Isn’t it interesting? When fingers were pointed at the possibility of a 9/11 “inside job”, an official rebuttal was “Surely not! Because some of our own government personnel were victims. For example, Barbara Olson, wife of former Bush Solicitor General Ted Olson, perished on the plane that slammed into the Pentagon during the 9/11 incident.” That’s what was served up to the public.

However, on September 22, 2005, Barbara Olson was captured – alive - by intelligence sources. She was wearing a disguise and **carrying a Vatican passport.**

## ***VIETNAM WAR AND J.F. KENNEDY***

Why did the Jesuit General want the Vietnam War? The people of **Vietnam**, the Buddhists, were unconvertible. They **would not convert to Catholicism**. They didn't need Rome. There had been a Jesuit presence in Vietnam for centuries, so it had been decided that about a million or so Buddhists would have to be "purged". They would later continue this purge of Cambodia, with Pol Pot, and the purge is yet for Thailand. It was a purging of Laos, Cambodia, and Vietnam of all these Buddhists, just as they purged the Buddhists of **China** with **Mao**, who was **completely controlled by the Jesuits**.

**Kennedy** was against the Vietnam War, and he was going to do away with the CIA, and undermine the power of the Jesuit controlled fiat Federal Reserve Bank.

Now, the CIA was composed of the SS. The **CIA** now was **the intelligence arm of the Vatican**. The Knights of Malta were throughout. Casey was a Knight of Malta. Angleton was a Knight of Malta. The Knights were through and through it. Angleton manned the "Vatican desk", and that is a desk within the CIA that has a direct link to the Vatican.

So, Kennedy wanted to end this "intelligence community". That was the end of him. For anyone attempting to end the CIA, and attempting to end the Vietnam War, would not be allowed to do so. The big kicker was that he attacked the **Jesuits' Federal Reserve Bank** by printing United States Notes. The Jesuits got rid of him. They killed our only Roman Catholic president.

Indeed it was a Roman Catholic, not USA Protestants, who truly sought to resist the temporal power of the pope in the USA. And in many ways, even though Kennedy was, in fact, a socialist and communist, at least he resisted the temporal power of the Pope. That's why they got rid of John F. Kennedy.

Arlen Specter was Cardinal Spellman's Jew in the assassination of President Kennedy, and he would never say a word about it. They use Jews for front men to blame; that is the Jesuit way.

As soon as he was assassinated, the following day, the head of the CIA went to the White House and they reverse Kennedy's Memorandum. The CIA made the Vietnam War a full-scale, *carte blanche* war. The CIA was heavily funded, because it was a CIA war. In Vietnam they tried all of their new technology. It was a great experimental theatre, and Kennedy knew this. He knew it, and he knew that the American people had no idea what was going down. He still tried to resist it, against his father's warnings. Because his father was the most powerful Knight of Malta in the Empire.

## ***DRUG INDUSTRY***

And guess who controls the drug industry?

The Vatican controls all of the drug trade—all of the heroin, all of the opium, all of the cocaine, everything going around in Colombia.

Colombia has a concordat with the Pope. A concordat is a treaty with the Pope. Hitler had a concordat. Mussolini had a concordat. Franco had a concordat. They want to set up a concordat in America.

Rome also controls most major pharmaceutical companies in the world. This was predicted to occur, in Revelation:

Revelation 18:23 - "*By thy sorceries [Greek: pharmakeia = medicine, pharmacies] were all nations deceived.*"

When Pope Benedict visited the US in April, 2008, President Bush organized a banquet reception in the Pope's honour. But the Pope never showed up. While they waited, he ignored the gesture, and went to visit his Cardinals.

Doesn't that carry the message as to who is in charge?

Yes, Rome has the power to use America to do her dirty work, as well as ensure that the whole world follows – while she herself comes across as the great moral leader.

### ***JESUIT OATH***

In 1981, ex-Jesuit insider Alberto Rivera, disclosed the oath he took as a professed Jesuit. We read:

#### **Ceremony Of Induction And Extreme Oath Of The Jesuits**

*(Given to a Jesuit of minor rank when he is  
to be elevated to a position of command.)*

Superior Speaks:

“My son, heretofore you have been taught to act the dissembler among the Roman Catholics to be a Roman Catholic, and to be a spy even among your own brethren: to believe no man, to trust no man. Among the reformers, to be a reformer; among the Huguenots [French Protestants] to be a Huguenot: among the Calvinists, to be a Calvinist: among the Protestants [those who protest and disagree with the Roman Catholic institution], generally to be a Protestant: and obtaining their confidence to seek even to preach from their pulpits, and to denounce with all the vehemence [violent emotion] in your nature our Holy Religion and the Pope; and even to descend so low as to become a Jew among the Jews, that you might be enabled to gather together all information for the benefit of your order as a faithful soldier of the Pope.

“You have been taught to insidiously plant the seeds of jealousy and hatred between states that were at peace, and incite them to deeds of blood, involving them in war with each other, and to

create revolutions and civil wars in communities, provinces and countries that were independent and prosperous, cultivating the arts and the sciences and enjoying the blessings of peace;

“To take sides with the combatants and to act secretly in concert with your brother Jesuit who might be engaged on the other side, but openly opposed to that with which you might be connected;

“Only that the church might be the gainer in the end in the conditions fixed in the treaties for peace, and that the ends justify the means.

“You have been taught your duty as a spy, to gather all statistics, facts and information in your power from every source: to ingratiate yourself into the confidence of the family circle of Protestants and heretics of every class and character, as well as that of the merchant, the banker, the lawyer, among the schools and universities, in parliament and legislatures, and in the judiciaries and councils of State, and to ‘be all things to all men’, for the Pope’s sake, whose servants we are unto death.

“You have received all your instructions heretofore as a novice [one who has no training], a neophyte [a newly ordained priest], and have served as a coadjutor [worked as a helper], confessor and priest, but you have not yet been invested with all that is necessary to command in the army of Loyola and in the service of the Pope.

“You must serve the proper time as the instrument and executioner as directed by your superiors; for none can command here who has not consecrated [made secret or holy] his labours with the blood of the heretic; for ‘without the shedding of blood no man can be saved.’

“I, \_\_\_\_\_, now, in the presence of Almighty God, the blessed Virgin Mary, the blessed Michael the Archangel, the blessed St. John the Baptist, the Holy Apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul and all the saints and sacred hosts of heaven....

“I, furthermore, promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly and openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, as I am directed to do.

“That when the same cannot be done openly, I will secretly use the poisoned cup, the strangulation cord, the steel of the poniard [a dagger] or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the person or persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or superior of the brotherhood of the holy faith, of the Society of Jesus.”

(Supplied by ex-Jesuit Roberto Rivera, *Double-Cross: Alberto, Part 2*, 1981)

## **2007 Confession of a Mafia leader**

The grandson of Lucky Luciano, Gambino, now free after a 20 year prison term, made a guest appearance on Greg Szymanski’s radio show, *The Investigative Journal* on Liberty Radio. With nothing to lose, he revealed the secret machinations and power of the Vatican:

“When you grow up in ‘The Family’ like I did, you learn right off the bat that protection comes from everywhere, including the CIA, FBI and blessings from the Vatican who are at the top of the ladder when it comes to benefiting from Mafia street crime,” said Gambino, who became a “Made Man” at the age of five, a Mafia term used for their top street captains.

“The Vatican officials, federal judges, top politicians all used to get regular pay-offs from the Gambino Family and, in fact, the Vatican and U.S. government make more money off the illegal drug trade than we did.

“That is why I am talking after just getting out of jail after 20 years. I am talking because people need to know the U.S.

government and the Vatican are more dangerous and corrupt than the Mafia ever was.

“For example, I know for a fact the Cardinal in Palermo runs the Sicilian mob and former Cardinal Spellman of New York was considered the Vatican’s American Godfather since he pulled the strings and had his hands deep into organized crime.

“I was there when [President John Kennedy] was shot and I know for a fact Rosselli was in the storm drain doing the shooting and Frank Sturgiss was also part of the hit team,” said Gambino. “The same group of guys we have talked about in the Vatican and U.S. government gave the orders and asked the Mafia families for help in taking down Kennedy.”

Although Gambino knows he’s crossing a sensitive line for going public about the inner-workings of the Mafia and its complicity with the Vatican and U.S. government, he added that it’s important for Americans to finally understand how things “really work on the streets” and how Church, State and big business are working together to destroy America.

And if there remain any doubters that the Vatican and Jesuit Order have had their dirty hands in organized crime in order to destroy the moral and financial fabric of the U.S., Gambino’s confessions should lay that to rest.

“If you don’t believe the hard facts and the hundreds of researchers who have implicated the Vatican to the demise of America, then believe Gambino because he learned it first hand from being on the streets and working with the top crime bosses. He has nothing to gain from lying since he has already served his time and wants to set the record straight once and for all regarding who are the real controllers of the New World Order,” comments one bold researcher. (*www.libertyradiolive.com The entire interview can be heard at www.arcticbeacon.com as well as Liberty Radio.*)

## 32

# AMERICA IN BIBLE PROPHECY

Can it really be true? America in Bible prophecy - absolutely! When you think about it, it makes sense that the most powerful and influential nation on earth will play a vital role in the final stunning events of the world's closing history.

But even more surprises await you as the Bible reveals how the leading nation of the world came to exist and why! Let's start with these eight verses which give a prophetic picture of America in the days ahead.

*Revelation 13:11-18 - "And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth [legislatively compels] the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.*

*"And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, tha they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.*

*"And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might*

*buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six."*

Two world powers are symbolized in Revelation chapter 13.

**QUESTION:** What is the first power?

**ANSWER:** The beast with seven heads (Revelation 13:1-10) is none other than the Roman Papacy. (See Chapter 29 of this present work.)

Remember that beasts in Bible prophecy symbolize nations or world powers (Daniel 7:17, 23).

**QUESTION:** In what year was the papacy predicted to lose its world influence and power?

**ANSWER:** The Bible predicted that the papacy would lose its world influence and power at the end of the prophetic 42 months.

*"Power was given unto him to continue forty and two months." Revelation 13:9*

(The year-day principle in Bible prophecy was explained in an earlier chapter.) This prophecy was fulfilled in 1798, when Napoleon's General Berthier took the pope captive and the papal power received its deadly wound. (See Chapter 29)

*"And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death... He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword." Revelation 13:3,10*

This harmonises with the words of Jesus, *“He that kills with the sword shall perish with the sword.”* (Matthew 26:52)

This principle is strongly presented throughout the Bible:

- *“Whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.”*  
(Gal.6:7)
- *“They shall eat the fruit of their doings.”*  
(Isa.3:10,11)

Now prophecy pronounces this same verdict of poetic justice (tit for tat) to the first beast of Revelation 13 – the beast that receives a deadly wound on one of its heads.

## 1. TO ARISE AROUND 1798

Around the same time the papacy was receiving its deadly wound, a new power was predicted to arise.

*“And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.”* Revelation 13:11



*The beast of Revelation 13:11-18 symbolizes America.*

The papal captivity mentioned in verse 10 took place in 1798, and the new power (verse 11) was seen emerging at that time. The United States declared its independence in 1776, voted the Constitution in 1787, adopted the Bill of Rights in 1791, and received first international recognition as a nation in 1798 - the very same year that the papacy received its wound and was declared "dead".. The timing obviously fits America. No other power could possibly qualify.

## 2. NOT IN THE OLD WORLD

*“I saw another beast coming up out of the earth.”*  
Revelation 13:11

### ***(a) EARTH IS DEFINITELY CONTRASTED WITH SEA.***

You will notice how the coming up of the two beasts of Revelation 13, is contrasted:

1. The first beast rises “OUT OF THE SEA” (v. 1) - which the Bible itself explains as “*nations, and kindreds, and tongues, and peoples*” (Revelation 17:15) – meaning that the first beast rises in a populated region among the nations, and kindreds, and tongues, and peoples. The same symbol of the sea is found in the Old Testament: “*Behold, a people shall come from the north, and a great nation, and many kings shall... roar like the sea.*” (Jer.50:41-42) Thus the sea is a symbol of the restless, warring, heaving nations of mankind. (See also Isa.17:12,13)

2. In obvious contrast, the second beast rises not out of the sea of nations, but “OUT OF THE EARTH” (v.11) – hinting that it rises up somewhere away from that sea of nations.

The appearance of this beast and the manner of its rise suggests that the power which it represents is unlike those brought to view under the preceding symbols.

*The great kingdoms that have ruled the world obtained their dominion by conquest and revolution*, and they were presented to the prophet Daniel as beasts of prey, rising when the “*four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea.*” (Dan. 7:2) But the beast with horns like a lamb is seen “*coming up out of the earth;*” (Rev. 13:11) signifying that **instead of overthrowing other powers to establish itself**, the nation thus represented arose in territory previously unoccupied, and grew up gradually and peacefully.

**It could not, then, arise among the crowded and struggling nationalities of the Old World – that turbulent sea of “peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.”** It must be sought somewhere away from that sea of nations.

***(b) EARTH" DENOTES A WILDERNESS REGION***

The second clue is this: The “THE EARTH” is a symbol used in Revelation chapter 12 to indicate a sparsely populated, wilderness region.

This specification does not apply to Britain, France, Russia, Iran, or any nation of Europe or Asia. An old power of the Eastern and European hemisphere would not qualify to meet this description.

**It rises** in a sparsely populated wilderness region of the world.  
**It does not** rise in the Old World.



Being described as “another” beast, “coming up out of the earth” (instead of the “sea”), it must be found in some territory not covered by any other symbols.

- Babylon and Medo-Persia covered all the civilized part of Asia.
- Greece covered Eastern Europe, including Russia.
- Rome, with the ten kingdoms into which it was divided, covered all Western Europe. In other words, all of the Old World that interacted significantly with God’s people is covered by prophetic symbols.

But there is a mighty ruling power in the Western Hemisphere, worthy of being mentioned in prophecy, which is not yet brought in. Of all the powers on earth for which any reason exists that should be mentioned in prophecy, one alone, Protestant America, remains.

Does the earth beast represent the United States? If it does, then all the symbols find an application, and all the ground is covered. If it does not, it follows that the United States is not represented in prophecy, and the symbol of the earth beast is left without a nation to which it can apply.

But the first of these suppositions is not probable, and the second is not possible.

### **3. HAS ELEMENTS OF POWER SUGGESTING THE INNOCENCE OF YOUTH**

*“He had two horns like a lamb.”* (Rev.13:11)

In plain English, the thought is of *“two little horns like those of a lamb”*. The horns of a lamb have hardly begun to grow. The lamb-like feature applies to the horns, not to the beast. The lamb-likeness of the horns **indicates youthfulness**.

Youthful, like the horns of “a lamb” – “a young power” – does not apply to Britain, France, Russia, Iran, or any nation of Europe or Asia.

An old power of the Eastern and European hemisphere would not qualify to meet this description. Again, this earth beast does not rise in the Old World.

#### **4. GROWS UP SILENTLY, PEACEFULLY**

*“I saw another beast coming up out of the earth.”*  
Revelation 13:11

Just as important as **WHERE** it comes up, is **HOW**.

The Greek word chosen here for “coming up” is “*anabainon*”. What does this mean?

In Matthew 13:7 it is used of plants growing up. When “*anabainon*” (“coming up”) is combined with “the earth” (as in “coming up out of the earth”) it conveys the meaning of “growing up out of the earth like a seed.”

The second beast will grow up silently and peacefully. It is gentle in its manner of rising, like a plant gently emerging from the earth.

**It will spring up like a plant, silently and peacefully.**

When we compare this text with the comments of secular historians, the result is breathtaking:

A prominent writer speaks of “the mystery of her **coming forth from vacancy**,” noting also that “The history of the United States was separated by a beneficent providence ... and **like a silent seed** we grew into an empire.” (G.A. Townsend, *The New World Compared With the Old*, p.635)

“...emerging... **amid the silence of the earth.**” (Dublin *Nation*, c. 1850)

We often see, when a Bible prophecy is fulfilled, that secular historians describe the event in almost the same terms as the Bible prophecy of that event. This is a common phenomenon. It is almost uncanny.

America did not rise to power by overthrowing/conquering another empire, but by quietly growing up.

## **5. POSSESSES TWO FEATURES OF STRENGTH**

“...*two horns like those of a lamb*” (Rev.13:11)

This second beast rises with two lamb-like horns.

- (a) “**Lamb-like**” suggests both youth and innocence.
- (b) **Horns** indicate power, authority. (Hab.3:4 ; Zech.1:21)

The succeeding verses in Revelation 13 elaborate on this authority, showing us that this earth beast exercises authority in two realms:

1. state authority (political and economic – vv.12,16,17), and
2. religious (v.15).

If the lamb’s horns suggest youthful **innocence**, this would be consistent with **civil and religious freedom** (separation of church and state).

The “**two horns like a lamb**” well represent the character of the United States Government, as expressed in its two fundamental principles, Republicanism (civil freedom) and Protestantism (religious freedom).

This is in accord with the definition of horns as kingdoms. (Dan.8:3,20) 1. RELIGIOUS: Jesus, in His parables, referred to His Church as “the kingdom of God”, “the kingdom of heaven”. 2. POLITICAL: Then there is the State, or political kingdom. As the two horns are separate, so are the kingdom of the Church and the kingdom of the State separate yet within the one nation.

This separation, taught by Jesus in Matthew 22:21, would give civil and religious freedom. This would also make this nation an anti-Catholic power, since Rome has declared her opposition to such separation. Rome’s declared policy is that the State must be under the control of the Church.

The two horns are the separated powers of civil and religious freedom.

**For the first time in history** was a nation established on these two principles. With freedom of religious faith, every man was permitted to worship God according to the dictates of his conscience. *Republicanism and Protestantism* became the fundamental principles of the nation.

These principles are **the secret of its power** and prosperity. Many of the oppressed and down-trodden throughout Christendom have turned to this land with interest and hope.

***“THE EARTH helped the woman.”*** (Rev.12:16)

Persecuted Christians left Europe for a better life in the New World. The Pilgrim Fathers landed in America...seeking religious liberty. They brought the Bible with them.

Those who founded the Protestant United States based their Constitution on two great principles, civil and religious liberty. The motto was “WE THE PEOPLE” – Protestant America gives liberty to all. These two principles – civil and religious liberty – were to be **the secrets of Protestant America’s strength.**

**And something else.** After showing crowns on the sea beast, the absence of crowns on the earth beast would suggest a government in which the power is not vested in any monarchy, but is lodged in the hands of the people.

From verse 14 we learn that appeal is made to the people when any national action is to be performed: “*Saying to them that dwell on the earth, that **they** [the people] should make an image to the beast.*”

This suggests a democratic, or republican, form of government.

**In all of history, no other ruling power fits this specification.**

For example, no penal colony, like Australia, with the cruel exactions upon prisoners, could possibly be described as having horns like an innocent lamb.

On what conditions have nations been given a place in prophecy?

And the answer is:

1. When they have acted a prominent place in world history.
2. When they have had jurisdiction over, or maintained important relations with, the people of God.

From the records of the Bible and history, we find this to be so. A nation enters prophecy **when the work and destiny of God’s people are definitely linked to it.**

The rise and progress of Protestant America has been of such a nature that Providence saw fit to forecast it in prophecy.

When prophecies of world conditions fill a third of the entire Bible – and when a large percentage of all those prophecies pertains to national and international world happenings of **our** time, now, could Protestant America **be ignored** in these prophecies?

## ***“DIVINE INTERPOSITION”***

Governor Pownal, an English statesman in 1780, called the establishment of the USA “a revolution that has stronger marks of divine interposition superseding the ordinary course of human affairs than any other event which this world has experienced.”

Eight facts that should be noted are that:

1. No nation has ever acquired so vast a territory in so quiet a manner.
2. No nation has ever risen to such greatness by so peaceable means.
3. No nation has ever advanced so rapidly in all that constitutes national strength and capital.
4. No nation has ever arisen to such a pinnacle of power in a space of time so incredibly short.
5. No nation in so limited a time has developed such unlimited resources.
6. No nation has ever existed founded on principles of justice so pure and undefiled.
7. No nation has ever existed in which the consciences of men have been left so untrammelled and free.
8. In no nation and in no age has the gospel found such freedom to spread its principles and develop its strength.

Freedom is the essence of America – freedom of speech, freedom of assembly, freedom from fear, freedom of religion. Martin Luther King said, “America is essentially a dream. It is a dream of freedom and equality. And freedom is the way to equality.”

This is **the first time in world history** that any world ruling power has been **founded on biblical principles** – which has enabled the gospel of these last days to explode its influence **as never before** – and in ways that might never otherwise have become possible.

This has *affected God's people in a positive manner more than any other ruling power in history.*

If this power was NOT mentioned in prophecy, we might well wonder WHY NOT?

How astonishingly accurate this prophecy has become! Never in world history has any power fulfilled these specifications... except one.

## **6. WILL EXERT WORLD-WIDE INFLUENCE**

*“And he... causeth the world and them that dwell therein to...” (Rev.13:12)*

The second beast grows into **a super power** – strong enough to dictate to the whole world. It exercises a world wide influence. The whole world follows its example (vv.12,16,17).

Let's ask it again, what power with global influence arose around 1798, in a location away from the warring nations, with two elements of strength (identified in verses 15 to 17 as political and religious), which at first appear gentle, but would turn oppressive? Only one power on earth meets these specifications.

According to prophecy, it must be a ruling power possessing enormous worldwide influence and might. Here Protestant America stands unchallenged.

### ***A DRAMATIC CHANGE IS PROPHESED TO COME***

Special Note: How we wish we could stop right here in Jesus' description of America but we can't, because He didn't. What

comes next is jolting and disquieting. America is truly a great country with its freedom of conscience, press, speech, and enterprise the protection it provides its golden opportunities its sense of fair play its sympathy for the underdog and its strong Christian orientation. It is not perfect, but even still a host of people from other countries hasten to become American citizens every year. If America's doors were opened wide, a vast portion of the people of the world would move to the United States at once to "heaven on earth" as they perceive it.

Sadly, this richly blessed country will change drastically in the days just ahead, precipitating unparalleled heartache and woe for God's people. We report it with reticence and deep concern.

## **7. WILL CHANGE TO OPPRESSIVE AUTHORITY IN TWO REALMS: *POLITICAL/FINANCIAL AND RELIGIOUS***

*“And he had **power** to... cause that as many as would not **worship**... should be killed...And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark...and that no man might **buy or sell**...”*  
(Rev.13:15-17)

In the first appearance of the beast, as it rises from the earth, these two horns appear young and innocent – like those of a young lamb.

But imagine if these freedoms were taken away...Now these two horns of power are identified further, as we watch this second beast changing character. Its authority in the realms of **state and religion** ultimately become oppressive:

1. **Political and economic** pressure will be brought against all who refuse to violate their conscience by accepting the mark of the beast. (Rev.13:12,15-17)

2. **Religious laws** involving “worship” will be enforced with penalties. (Rev.13:15)



*Apostate religion and civil government will unite  
in the end time to force people's consciences.*

Prophecy states that America will become a persecuting power that will force people to go against their conscience, as did papal Rome see the first half of Revelation chapter 13).

***"Caused the earth and them which dwell therein to worship [obey] the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed."*** (Revelation 13:12)

The United States will lead the nations of the world in forcing allegiance to the papal Antichrist. ***The issue is always worship.*** Whom will you worship and obey? ***Will it be Christ your Creator and Redeemer, or Antichrist?*** Every soul on earth will finally worship one or the other.

## 8. DRAWS THE WORLD INTO A FALSE WORSHIP MOVEMENT

*“And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven in the sight of men. And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast.” (Rev.13:13,14)*

The entire approach will appear to be deeply spiritual and reasonable. To add credibility, miracles will be wrought (Revelation 13:14, 15) which will deceive billions (Revelation 13:3).

These miracles emanate from the spirits of devils. (Compare Revelation 16: 13, 14; Matthew 24:24; 1 Timothy 4:1).

Those who refuse to join this movement will be considered godless radicals. Jesus labels Protestant America of the end time a "false prophet" (Compare Revelation 19:20 and 20:10), because it will appear spiritual and trustworthy but instead will be satanic in its conduct.

All this may seem impossible, but Jesus' words are always totally reliable and true (Titus 1:2). He foretold the rise and fall of the four world empires and the Antichrist (Daniel chapters 2 and 7) at a time when such predictions seemed outlandish and incredible. But all came to pass precisely as predicted. His warning to us today regarding prophecy is, *"I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe."* John 14:29.

This suggests that American Protestantism **will lead a great counterfeit religious revival** in which the false **“Pentecostal” fire of spiritualism** is to play a prominent role. If you are up to

date on religious developments, you may be aware that this is already occurring.

One is reminded of a recent inter-church convention whose banner screamed out, "SIGNS AND WONDERS". The focus on occultic practices with signs and wonders is exploding through American Protestantism, forging a unification of churches.

### ***BIRTHPLACE OF SPIRITISM***

And can you guess where modern spiritism had its origin? In the USA. Beginning in Hydesville, New York, in the family of John D. Fox in the latter part of March, 1848, it spread with incredible rapidity through all the world.

There are four clues in this prophecy that the second beast will **counterfeit the work of the Holy Spirit**. Here are two of the clues:

1. As the true Holy Spirit brought down the "fire" of Pentecost, so will the second beast bring down counterfeit heavenly "fire" in a false spiritual revival.
2. Just as the Holy Spirit acts on Jesus' authority and glorifies Jesus alone (John 16:13-14), so will the second beast act on the first beast's authority and cause the world to worship the first beast alone. (Rev.13:12,14)

## **9. IT BECOMES AN EXACT LIKENESS TO ROME'S SYSTEM**

*"Saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live." Revelation 13:14*

## Meaning of "image"

You will notice that in forming “an image to the beast” (v.14), the **purpose** of the image is **to honour the first beast**.

The first mention of the word “image” in the Bible is in Genesis 1:26 – “*And God said, Let us make man in our **image**, after our **likeness**.*” Here the word “image” is defined as “likeness”. We have already noted a biblical principle that the first occurrence of a word in the Bible generally helps us in fixing the meaning of a word.

When one makes an image “to” or “of” something, one becomes **an exact likeness** of that other one. Jesus is described as the “express image” of God, because He exhibited the exact character of the Father.

In forming an image to the first beast, the second beast becomes a perfect likeness in character to that first beast.

**The first beast arose as a union of church and state**, when Rome used secular government to enforce Sunday observance upon the people. When the first **Sunday laws** were promulgated in the fourth century, most of the Christian world was still observing the Bible Sabbath, Saturday, the seventh day of the week. But the church in Rome united church with state, and by force of arms and the slaughter of millions, got Sunday observance to replace the true Sabbath. This is well-documented history.

**The papacy’s plan is for America to do the same** – for the religious bodies to join forces and secure government support to enforce their beliefs. When that is achieved, American Protestantism will have created an “image” of the papal beast.

This plan is already well advanced. The Christian Coalition along with Christian Churches Together and Catholic Campaign

for America has developed a ten point agenda for America that they want to implement at the federal and state levels by law. The seventh amendment on their list is a call for a national day of rest, undoubtedly Sunday.

On November 15, 2007, these three religious organizations were involved in a secret meeting at the L'enfant Plaza Hotel in Washington DC with a Vatican Cardinal.

American Government NSA security agents instructed that no one was to take any recording devices or cameras into the meeting, and that nothing was to be released for publication until the Vatican had approved it.

Addressing the group, the Cardinal said that “Some of the things that we at the Vatican are concerned about is what is happening here [in America] to the Lord’s day... The people must be told that this day must be kept holy. You must **work together** as leaders of this nation. **As goes this nation, so goes the world.**”

Later, the Christian Coalition issued a communiqué in which it used the same words the Cardinal used at the secret meeting, such as “**immoral slime,**” “**America, the second Israel,**” “We must show our Lord that we will **work together...**” etc. The emphasis of the communiqué was the same as the Cardinal’s emphasis – “Protect the Lord’s Day.”

**The evangelicals are taking lessons from Rome as well as instructions. They copy her. They are setting up a mirror image of her.** Just watch as Protestant America’s “image” (likeness) to the papacy develops and fulfils prophecy.

## **Completing of the image to Rome**

Protestantism will form “an image to the beast” when it reaches its hand across the gulf to join with the papacy to combine

church and state and bring persecution on anyone who refuses to worship as Rome demands. The State will then enforce the religious beliefs of that first beast on the entire population. Revelation 13 describes the rise and development of the Image of the Beast, imposed on the most powerful nation in the history of the world, America.

How true is this once unlikely prediction now beginning to look: “When the leading churches of the United States, uniting upon such points of doctrine as are held by them in common, shall influence the state to enforce their decrees and to sustain their institutions, then Protestant America will have formed an image of the Roman hierarchy, and the infliction of civil penalties upon dissenters will inevitably result.” (E.G. White, *The Great Controversy*, p. 445)

---

## THE IMAGE FORMING

### PAPAL ROME

**Nominally Christian**

**Practises Roman Canon Law**

**Holy Crusade against Islam**  
 - launched from a cathedral  
 - run by Knights of Malta

*Cardinal’s speech:* “**America is the second Israel.** We must work with the state legislatures to appropriately help them to understand that all the **immorality and slime** must be stopped and that we must **work together** in unison to show our Lord that this must be stopped.”

**Initiated Sunday laws thru’ the state**

### PROTESTANT AMERICA

**Nominally Christian**

**Switching to Roman Canon Law**

**Holy Crusade against Islam**  
 - launched from a cathedral  
 - run by Knights of Malta

*Christian Coalition communiqué:* “**America, the second Israel,**” “**immoral slime,**” “We must show our Lord that we will **work together...**” Protect the Lord’s day.”

**Planning Sunday laws thru’ the state**

---

In New York on April 20, 2008, Pope Benedict XVI met with certain important political and religious leaders in a large underground assembly room connected to the Yankee stadium, in which he pursued his agenda for the **enactment of a Sunday law**. He directed the attention of his hearers to his concern that such legislation should meet with his approval.

Damage to the environment will be used as an issue to raise support for the "work-free Sunday".

On September 9, 2015, shortly before Pope Francis' visit to America to address Congress and the United Nations, I received this priceless email from a man named Jose. He asked, "*Why is the pope coming so far to talk about the weather?*"

Answer: In pushing for a more work-free-family-friendly environment, the Vatican's agenda is Sunday observance, its claimed MARK of authority over mankind - in opposition to the Sabbath (Saturday), God's claimed MARK of authority as our Creator.

November 4, 2016 was a milestone threat to religious liberty and freedom of speech, with the impending forced Sunday worship waiting in the wings. Hidden in the Paris Climate Change Agreement which has been voted on by all nations - all 197 of them - is none other than the pope's climate change encyclical which includes the proposal for enforcement of a Sunday law.

The enforcement of Sunday is carefully hidden in Section #237 of the pope's Climate Change Encyclical. November 4, 2016 was the date to begin the enforcement of this agreement. It has now been agreed upon by ALL nations.

Do you recall the Bible prophecy?: "*All the world wondered after the beast.*" (Revelation 13:3).

The United States will form an image (likeness) to the beast by

**legislating religious practice.** It will pass laws requiring worship and force people to either obey them or face penalties.

America will combine civil government and apostate Protestantism in a "marriage" that will support the papacy. It will then influence all the nations of the world to follow her example. Thus, the papacy will gain worldwide support.

*"And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name." (Revelation 13:16-17)*

Its time has come. And there is no chance this agenda can fail.

It is all ready to go into law - under the large print smokescreen of a law to protect the family, appearing on the surface to benefit you - but, hidden away down, this other oppressive law has been inserted into it in small print, so as to be missed by those who vote it into law.

When this is **enforced** by law, such a move will be in violation of God's Ten Commandment law. It will result in religious oppression of minority groups.

The prophecy says that the second beast of Revelation (American Protestantism) will "*speak like a dragon*".

QUESTION: How does a nation speak?

ANSWER: Through its laws.

The second beast will form a likeness to the first beast (Rome), when religion and state join hands to enforce religious laws. It will "*cause*" (compel) the people to obey the wishes of the first beast (Rome). And the whole world will follow suit.  
(Rev.13:12,16)

You have heard the expression, “When America sneezes the whole world catches a cold”?

### ***TWO EMERGING POWERS***

Revelation chapter 13 is clear. Two superpowers will emerge in the end time: the United States of America and the Papacy.

The United States of America will support the Papacy by leading a drive to force the people of the world to worship the beast (papacy) and receive his mark or else face death.

The next two questions will evaluate the strengths of these two superpowers.



*The Papacy is the strongest religio-political power on earth.*

### ***THE PAPACY***

**QUESTION:** How strong and influential is the Papacy today?

**ANSWER:** She is by far the strongest religio-political power in the world. Virtually every leading country of the world has an official ambassador or state representative at the Vatican. Notice the following facts:

1. The papacy is so influential and powerful that nearly every major country consults her before making major policy moves. Her "large diplomatic corps maintains relations with more than 100 nations." (*U.S. News and World Report*, October 30, 1978, p. 24)

2. She takes the credit for the demise of communism, saying that Mary, Jesus' mother, guided the pope's strategy that brought down communism. ("Handmaid or Feminist," *Time*, December 30, 1991, pp. 64, 65)

3. The aim of the pope is to unify the Christian world under the leadership of the Papacy by the end of this century. He has made more than 40 world trips to lay the ground work for this goal. (Gene H. Hogberg, *The Plain Truth*, November/December 1989, pp. 24, 25)

4. The worldwide response has been almost overwhelming. During the Iraqi crisis, the pope and America's president sometimes discussed world affairs weekly by phone. (*U.S. News and World Report*, August 13, 1990, p. 18)

5. On June 7, 1982, former President Ronald Reagan and Pope John Paul II met for 50 minutes at the Vatican and structured a plan to eliminate communism. The United States shipped tons of modern communication equipment to Poland (the starting place) to help spread necessary information to the masses. ("The Holy Alliance," *Time*, February 1992, pp. 28, 31, 35)

6. Gorbachev said, "*Everything which took place in Eastern Europe in recent years would have been impossible without the Pope's efforts and the enormous role, including the political*

*role, which he played in the world arena."* (Mikhail Gorbachev, *Toronto Star*, March 9, 1992)

7. On September 24, 2015, for the very first time in history, a pope addressed the United States Congress. He was applauded, eulogised and feted, in Protestant America. And the very next day addressed all the nations of the world in the United Nations assembly. The prophecy states that "*all the world*" will "*wonder after*" the Papacy.

Millions of Protestants are ready now to join with Rome and declare the Reformation officially dead.

## **AMERICA**

**QUESTION:** How strong and influential is the United States today?

**ANSWER:** The United States is regarded as the world's number one military power and center of influence.



When a Marxist group overthrew the government of Ethiopia, America was asked to negotiate. When Boris Yeltsin took office as president of the newly independent Russia, he visited America first. Former U.S.S.R. President Mikhail Gorbachev turned to America in his crisis. When Kuwait was invaded, its

government called on America. The U.S.-led war against Iraq rallied the support of almost the entire world. A National Public Radio correspondent called the American president the "*president of the world.*" We now have "*a highly unusual world structure with a single power, the United States, at the apex of the international system.*" (Krauthammer, *The New Republic*, p. 23)



*All world nations now look to the United States for protection and support.*

It is clear that the influence and power of both the United States and the papacy are escalating with rapidity.

### ***POSSIBLE CATALYSTS FOR A WORLD-WIDE DEATH PENALTY***

*"And cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed."* (Revelation 13:15)

**WE shall elaborate on this in Chapter 43.**

**QUESTION:** What other factors could possibly help set the stage for a worldwide law to execute those who refuse to violate conscience?

**ANSWER:** We cannot name them with certainty, but a few looming possibilities are as follows:

- A. The activity of terrorists.
- B. Riots and escalating crime and evil.
- C. Drug wars.
- D. A major economic crash.
- E. AIDS and other epidemics.
- F. Nuclear threats from radical nations.
- G. Political corruption.
- H. Gross miscarriage of justice by the courts.
- I. Welfare abuse.
- J. Increasing taxes.
- K. Pornography and sickening immorality.
- L. Appalling global disasters.
- M. Radical "special interest" groups.
- N. The abortion crisis.
- O. An EMP attack on the power grid

A backlash against corruption, lawlessness, immorality, permissiveness, injustice, poverty, weak and ineffective political leaders, and many similar woes could easily precipitate a demand for strong, specific laws to be rigidly enforced.

As world conditions worsen, America will experience a counterfeit, worldwide revival and will insist that religious laws be passed to force every person to participate. (This is represented by "an image to the beast" in Revelation 13:14.)

*Revelation 13:13-14 - "And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on*

*the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live."*

People will be forced to disregard God's holy, seventh-day Sabbath and worship instead on the beast's "holy" day - Sunday. Some will also comply simply for social or economic reasons.

World conditions will become so intolerable that a worldwide "back to God and prayer" movement, with all joining in worship and prayer on Sunday, will seem to be the only solution. Satan will deceive the world into believing that they must compromise Bible truth and enforce the keeping of Sunday holy.

But in reality, obedience to and worship of the beast will shut people out of God's kingdom. No wonder Jesus makes such an issue in Revelation over worshiping the beast and receiving his mark!

## ***SUMMARY***

It is prophesied that this second beast of Revelation 13 will eventually promote many of the errors of Rome and align itself with Rome's policies, becoming the chief agent to impose the false Sabbath upon her shores and over the entire world. This beast with lamb-like horns appears to be Christian, but it will speak, the Bible warns, as a dragon. Here is brought to our view the role of the USA and Protestantism in the end of time.

It is chiefly through the legislative councils in the USA, in league with apostate religious rulers, that a law will be passed contrary to the Laws of God. In defiance of God, they will attempt to enforce Sunday worship upon the whole earth, thereby rejecting God's true Sabbath of rest.

**QUESTION:** It doesn't seem fair that, in the final crisis, people who have never heard God's truth will innocently choose a counterfeit and thus be lost.

**ANSWER:** No one will face the final crisis without first having heard (Mark 16:15) and understood (John 1:9) God has a vital three-point message for today (See Chapter 33 of this present work.) People will choose to receive the mark of the beast at that time only because they do not wish to pay the price for following Christ.

# 33

## PLANNING AMERICA'S DOWNFALL

### PART 1

The following is from a taped interview by Jan Marcussen with (1) Jack Chick of "Chick Publications," and (2) ex-Jesuit priest Alberto Rivera.



"This I.D. card was issued by the Spanish government in Spain in 1967, under the rule of the Spanish dictator Franco. His security forces were equally as strict as the Gestapo had been in Germany. To obtain this document, Alberto had to supply birth certificate, identification papers and positive proof from his archdiocese of being a priest" **Alberto Rivera could not have possibly forged this document security was very strict.**



### *COLLEGE IN ROME PLANNING AMERICA'S DEMISE*

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** In order to maintain their disguise, and to uphold the Roman Catholic institution as a Christian church, a

Jesuit can go so far as to say that the pope is an antichrist, and still be in favour. [In the days of John Wycliffe there were three contending popes who were saying that about each other. John Wycliffe told the people that all three of them were correct.] After the Vatican II Council, they can debate anything. They've been granted license for it.

Many of the things that were planned in the Vatican II Council are coming to pass now. And as the days go by, I'm in a better position to deal with this ugly, horrifying matter of infiltration and penetration, because they are ugly, they are horrifying, and they are scary.

What the Jesuit wants to see is a complete - a complete unbalanced situation in any Christian group and any Christian community. Wherever the pure principles of Christianity are being preserved and taught and defended, they will have something to do.

Let me tell you a little about the Gregorian University in Rome. Of course, it's a Jesuit university. It is located on the second Vatican hill of the seven hills. That happens to be the hill dedicated to the destruction of the United States of America. (It is a college in the Vatican dedicated to destroy their present system and take them over.)

**Jack Chick:** They're 50% gone in the States. In the Bible belt, Catholics are moving in from Mexico and other Catholic countries, and marrying every Protestant girl they can get their hands on [to help fulfill the papal goal of making America Catholic]. Rome is really on the offensive.

### ***VATICAN II AND PROFESSIONAL KILLERS***

**Jack Chick:** Dr. Rivera revealed what took place on the last

night of the Vatican II Council when they told the world that we are all brothers and sisters in Christ. Instead of calling Protestants “heretics,” they would now call us “separated brethren.” They put on a whole new face.

But in another section of the Vatican there was a whole different picture. Dr. Rivera happened to be in that meeting. The Superior Jesuit General, whose name at the time was Pedro Aruppe [the Black Pope], was present. And all the Jesuits under extreme oath and induction were there. How many were there? Over 200?

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** Yes, over that.

**Jack Chick:** These were all hit men - professional killers for the Vatican. The head of the Inquisition was present [That’s the office the present pope had before becoming pope.] And Jesuit generals from around the world had been flown in for this special meeting.

This was one of the most important meetings ever held in the Vatican. And it was just at the completion of Vatican II [when they told the world they loved us], that the **black pope** had a special high mass to announce to all of these people present that they would *now launch the final purge for the last Inquisition.*

Dr. Rivera went white because he realized that Rome was now ready to go for the jugular and take us out. So he’s shown me what is coming in the future as applying to the US.

**Ex-Jesuit priest:** They’ve been infiltrating every church of any size. They’ve had their people moving in for the purpose of causing disruption and to shut their mouths if they ever open them against the Vatican.

In the Catholic institution they have what they call traditional Catholics. These are the ones who would shed every drop of their Catholic blood to defend the pope. They’ve got them all

over the world. It was Pope John Paul II who announced that they were now setting up tribunals in every Catholic Church.

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** Reviving.

**Jack Chick:** Reviving tribunals. Every time you have an Inquisition you have tribunals. So the traditional Catholics are taking the names of every Catholic who is not attending mass, who is supporting the 700 Club, or who is attending some of the Protestant churches. These people are now *marked*. These “unfaithful” Catholics are being led by Jesuits to go into every Protestant church and tell the people that we are now all brothers and sisters in Christ. These are *sacrificial lambs*. When Rome’s Inquisition begins, the plan is that these will all be *executed*.

Rome is planning for *the Inquisition to break when the US signs the concordat with the Vatican*. When we recognize the Vatican, it’s the *death-knell* for the US. As soon as we sign a concordat with the Vatican it means that their constitution will surpass our constitution. Their laws will be based on the Council of Trent. [The Council of Trent was convened in Martin Luther’s day to counteract the Protestant Reformation.]

**Ex-Jesuit priest:** Knowing what I knew while I was still a Jesuit, I can see the workings of Rome in the newspapers, on T.V., and in society. Most Catholics do not even know what is about to take place, but I can see it from the information that I was briefed as a Jesuit. *The planned massacre is going to be the greatest massacre that the world has ever witnessed*. This is required by Rome for the takeover - not of the United States only, but of the takeover of the world.

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** Rome’s efforts to regain the world were seen in the First World War and the Second World War, but the Vatican’s planned massacre will be greater than those wars that

killed millions and millions of people. This will be the last act of the Roman Catholic institution.

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** The book of Revelation identifies her as the great whore. Not only a whore, but *the* great whore. She is the mastermind of everything we have witnessed against the true cause of God 24 hours a day around the clock for 1600 years. You say Communism killed them? Behind it was Rome. Nazism killed the Jews? Behind it was Rome.

**Jack Chick:** The Communist Party was founded by Jesuits, and so was the Nazi Party. A lot of books are disappearing right now. Catholics are being sent into the libraries and are checking them out. Then they never return the books that reveal the history of what has been happening.

Years ago when we first started, I went into the library to find photographs of the instruments of the Inquisition. [During the papacy's 1260 year rule from 538 to 1798, from 50 million to 120 million "heretics" were murdered.] I had to have a special slip to pick them up because they told me that those books have been disappearing. They've been given the order to check them out and then lose the books.

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** That is part of the purge. That is part of the work of the Vatican in order to prepare for a concordat.

**Jack Chick:** The night that they signed a concordat with Germany, Hitler already had seventeen concentration camps ready to roll. The United States is already building her camps now.

[There are more than 600 of them built, and guillotines are being made ready – and soldiers are currently being trained how to use them. A Revelation prophecy tells us that many who refuse to follow Rome's mark of the beast will be beheaded – Rev.20:4.]

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** Yes. Prior to the signing of a concordat with the United States, the Vatican wants these, these, these, these, items to be taken care of. When they are debating with a nation or an individual concerning an agreement, you must give a little bit, and they give you a little bit.

### ***THE “MOTHER” OF ABOMINATIONS***

Rome is not just one of ten major religions. She is unique as **THE ONE SUPREME RULER OF WORLD AFFAIRS.**

**Jack Chick:** She is not only the **mother** of harlots, but she is “the **mother** of abominations of the earth.” (Rev.17:5) These abominations of the earth were conceived by her, and they were given birth by her.

But she works to isolate these very things as being separate from herself and pretends to be fighting them, so that you can never see that she has anything to do with them. And you’ll be thinking - “They’re not so bad after all. They’re fighting **abortion!** They’re fighting **drugs!** They’re fighting **alcohol!** They’re fighting **homosexuality!**”

- They masquerade when they say that they fight **Communism.** [Pope John Paul II was a member of the Communist Party himself, and they encouraged the young Catholic people to join it.]
- They are on the street right now saying that they are fighting **abortion.** Roman Catholicism fighting abortion? Do you know what that means? Who is fighting who? The priests and nuns have had more abortions than any group in the world.
- The pharmaceutical industry is in the hands of the Jesuits. It’s all part of their economy. They control the **illegal**

**drugs** with the mafia and the **legal drugs** with the pharmacies. The money that set up these pharmaceutical companies was money from the bank of the Vatican.

- They have the greatest **distilleries of whiskey** in the world.

We had a lady come into our front office the other day and she said, “Did you know that the **Catholic Church** is **the mafia** and the mafia is the Catholic Church? And we said, “yes.” She broke into tears and said, “I’ve been trying to tell people this and nobody believes me. I worked 14 years for the mafia. In upstate New York, they had the mafia godfathers come in from cities around the country. Every time one of these men would come in, he’d bring a Catholic priest with him and they’d all sit around talking about who they’re going to kill.”

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** Catholic historians are at work now to re-touch every school textbook to *wipe out anything* that would put a bad light on the church or expose the work of the hierarchy.

They have their own division among everybody. If they see that the Democrats are going to win, they have their division among the Democrats. If they think that the Republicans are going to win, they have their division among the Republicans.

The mafia is the most professional industry in the world because now the mafia is not dealing just with illegal drugs, but they are dealing *with the greatest trade unions*. They have the greatest industries. They deal with the greatest transactions in *banking, insurance companies, and real-estate*. [They own great *super-market chains* where you buy your groceries at a good price, and own and control many of the large *book and magazine publishing houses, wholesale houses, distributors, and many of the large book stores.*]

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** The popes are appointed by the Supreme Jesuit General [the black pope] first, and elected by the cardinals

second. They know so well what will happen if they do not perfectly do what the Jesuit General tells them. Sometimes cardinals who are appointed by the Jesuit General to be the next pope have said “no.”

**Unknown questioner in the interview:** What happens to them?

**Ex-Jesuit Priest:** What happens is, they don't survive. For this reason several cardinals die immediately after a new pope is elected. How can you call the Roman institution a Christian church when God calls her a whore, and God is going to put her on fire? (Jan Marcussen, *Letter 462*, WBNS.US)

### ***BUT GOD LOVES THE INNOCENT PEOPLE***

Our kind Father loves the dear Catholic people. And He gives us His tender love for them. The message He has given in the Bible for them is in Revelation chapters 17 and 18. These chapters clearly spell out that there is no future inside the Roman Catholic system.

*Revelation 18:4-5,23-24 - “Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. . . for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.”*

## **PART 2**

The following is from a taped interview with Hiram Dukes by historical researcher Jim Arrabito.

Hiram Dukes was a secret agent working for the US Federal Government during World War II and his wife was the chief stenographer for the Pentagon.

She says that all the money that went from the United States to Europe for the troops went first through the Vatican.

In Chicago, Dukes was invited into a huge mansion where a meeting was convened with high Roman Catholic dignitaries. He recalls that there were many cars all around it. As he entered, the host turned the key in the lock behind him, then opened a double door to a mammoth sized parlour and dining room with big double doors in between.

Seated around a table were cardinals from all over the US. They were planning a eucharistic congress in Scotland.

They strongly urged him to become one of them, offering him money, scholarships and other incentives.

**Hiram Dukes:** They told me the advantage of being Catholic. They said, “We’re going to take over America” and told what they’ll do with America. “And we’ve got it fixed so that no way in the world can they escape coming under our control.”

I asked, “How are you going to take over the South? It’s predominantly Protestant.”

“We’re going to seed the South with Catholic families – then when the men marry Protestant girls, the kids will be raised Catholic. And one quarter, one third, then over half – then, when we get more than half, then we’ve got America. That’s one way of doing it. But we’ve got other ways, too.”

“What if people in America heard of this, what if they knew this?”

“If they knew what we were planning, there’d be bloodshed in 24 hours, and lots in 48 hours.”

“Are you prepared to take over?”

“Yes, we have standing armies. We have everything prepared, with guns, ammunition and all the works. We can take over. You might as well join us and be on the right side of the fence.”

I said, “There’s nothing you can do to get me to join you. My heart’s going through to eternity... You’d better open the door and let me out, because I know there are others who know I’m here. And there’ll be an investigation if you don’t let me out.”

One in a Cardinal’s cap said to me, “We’ll let you go. But I’ll tell you this. Everyone born in the US who’s not born a Catholic is put on a white card. You are kept on that card until we feel like we need to watch you. Then you’re put on a blue card. And we watch you. If we feel like you shouldn’t be in existence, we’ll put you on a red card. From now on, you’re on a red card as long as you live.” (Jim Arrabito, Video, *Behind the Door*. LLT Productions) (Hiram Dukes revealed that Rome’s agents infiltrate churches to “gather information” to be used against Protestant church people in the future.)

### **PART 3**

The following is another testimony in a taped interview with Hiram Dukes by historical research specialist Jim Arrabito.

**Hiram Dukes:** Charlie Bebridge held a high position in the Church of Rome in New York. This occasion was a certain day specified by the organization when they should not eat meat. However, Charlie happened to be eating a beef steak. He said, “I don’t feel too good about this. I’m not supposed to do it today.”

Just then, three dignitaries of the Roman Catholic system walked in. And they talked to him about the work.

When they left, Charlie said, “You don’t know what this means to me. I’ll catch hell for this. I used to be the head official that used to deal with people who broke the rules. If you go down to some of the big churches in New York, down into the basement where corners are cut off... I was the one that took the people that was sentenced and put them in the corner [chained]... and [there was] put in one brick each day [slowly walling them in]. I put in the last brick. And there are many skeletons behind the wall. You don’t know what this means to me. I was the chief executioner for that deal. I’ll hear from them in a few days.”

A few days later he got a notice. He was told he had to meet before the tribunal in New York.

He left on a train. He said, “If I live I’ll send you a card for your birthday.” It never came.

Tribunals are now set up for the Catholic people. And for others too, if they can get away with it.

Under many churches being built I have seen the basements – with equipment being placed in them. Not just one storey down, but sometimes more. (Jim Arrabito, Video, *Behind the Door*. LLT Productions)

### **Final note:**

Similar evidence is coming in from many locations. Undercover, the *Inquisition is going on today*. The Inquisition has never stopped. Only the name and the instruments have changed. It is called *The Office for the Preservation of the Doctrine and the Faith*.

Jesuits are trained in chemistry, in poisons, and instruments of war. They don't kill direct. They are the intellectuals who prepare the plot to kill, and use agents to do the work.

The book *Night Journey From Rome*, by ex-priest Calabara Field (who was ultimately murdered), exposes **the secret Inquisition going on in the USA today**.

However, I do not want you to be afraid of what lies ahead. There is no need to fear what is coming. If your future is secure in Jesus Christ, if you have totally surrendered your life to Him, you can even rejoice if you have to suffer for Him. After all, didn't He suffer the greatest of all punishments, to rescue you?

It's ironic, when you think about it. Jesuits, since 1541, have been working busily to take over the world politically and religiously, **to control to excess** the coming New World Order. They have been infiltrating governments, churches and all institutions. They are now ready for a takeover.

After almost 500 years, they are now ready. But all this effort is going to be in vain. God is not caught by surprise. Bible prophecy foretold it. And, all that these infiltrators have laboured so hard for, will last only "one hour" (Rev.18:19) - meaning a very brief time.

Because Jesus will suddenly appear. He will take over, destroy the New World Order and deliver His people.

## 34 THREE ANGELS' MESSAGES

The three angels messages in Revelation 14 are critically important. They have just as much significance for us as the message Noah gave to the world before the Great Flood. The three angels' message is **the last warning to the world** before the second coming of Christ Jesus.



All three messages are linked together and cannot be separated. They give a combined warning to the world about whom it is that we need worship and obey.

These critical messages carry divine blessings. They are urgent counsel from heaven for our time.

Revelation 1:3 - *“Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.”*

This three-fold end time message is *a life and death message*.

---

### ***THE FIRST ANGEL'S MESSAGE***

The First Angel's Message is to remind God's people to fear (reverence) God and worship Him as Creator, because it is the judgment time.

The First Angel's Message is not only a message of judgment, but also a message of the "restoration of all things." It is the **final reformation** that will separate the remnant of God's faithful ones from a worldly focus, and prepare a people for the **coming of the Lord**.

*Revelation 14:6-7 - "And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, saying with a LOUD VOICE, fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and **worship him that made** heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters."*

The angel spreads the everlasting Gospel to every nation.

The First Angel's Message has three central themes:

- \* The Everlasting, Unchanging Good news of salvation.
  - \* Judgment and Grace
  - \* Creation and its Memorial
- 

The First Angel's Message calls for a choice between truth and error; between the binding claims of the Gospel and popular humanism; between exalting God and exalting self.

Notice the bottom line of the First Angel's Message:

*"Worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters."*

This is virtually quoting the 4th of the Ten Commandments which commands us **to devote the seventh day Sabbath (Saturday)** totally to our Creator.

There are many ways we can worship God:

- We can worship Him as our Saviour;
- We can worship Him as Protector;
- We can worship Him as King;
- We can worship Him as Priest;
- We can worship Him as Judge, and so on.

But in the First Angel's Message we are not commanded to worship Him as any of these, but to worship Him specifically in His role AS OUR CREATOR. And what does that mean? How do we worship Him in this capacity?

At the end of creation week, God set aside a special day to worship Him as our Creator. A day for us to rest and spend in special communion with our Creator (who by the way is Christ Jesus). And He blessed this day and made it holy.

*Genesis 2:1-3 - " Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God **blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.**"*

Now if you read the 4th commandment, you will see it points back to **creation and that seventh day of rest**, just as the first angels' message above points to the creation account and the God of creation.

Exodus 20:8-11 - "**Remember** the sabbath day, to **keep it holy**. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: **But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God**: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the LORD made **heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is**, and rested the seventh day: wherefore **the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.**"

Revelation 14:6 (the First Angel's Message)- "**Worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.**" This refers back to the **Sabbath commandment**.

So you see, those who preach this gospel message to the world in the end times will be quoting (teaching) the Sabbath commandment, calling men and women to **worship God as the Creator** by observing **that memorial of His creative act, which is the Sabbath (Saturday)**.

Clearly, the seventh day Sabbath is the **sign of worshipping the true God who created everything**. Whereas to keep Sunday is to **follow the tradition of man** - and thus ignore God's specific command which He has never cancelled.

It is quite ironic that the commandment which has been forgotten is the one which begins with the word "**remember**" (see above).

We are approaching the "**great final test**" that is to come upon the inhabitants of the world, and that **great final test** is whether you obey God (by honoring His Sabbath) OR obey man (and receive the mark of the beast).

The whole theme of the three angels messages is **whom** we WORSHIP. Obedience to God's Word is the greatest evidence of worshipping Him. It is **the test of genuine worship**.

Too often, men pay God lip service, but their hearts and lives are far from Him. Jesus said long ago:

Matthew 15:8 - *“This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.”*

Obedience to the words of God is always the great test as to whether we really are worshipping Him. Anything short of full obedience to His Word is only a mockery, and hypocrisy.

### ***THE SECOND ANGEL'S MESSAGE***

Revelation 14:8 - *"And there followed another angel, saying, **Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.**"*

Is this literal Babylon? No, because the old Babylon was destroyed in Old Testament times and Jeremiah prophesied that it would be in ruins forever (Jeremiah 51)

Babylon is also mentioned in Revelation 17 as *"BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS"*. The Roman Catholic Papal system incorporated many of the Pagan practices from Old Testament Babylon, which is why she has the name of Babylon applied to her in Revelation. Babylon also means "confusion", and there are plenty of confused practices and teachings within the Roman Catholic Church.

But who are the harlots of whom she is the mother? They are the Protestant churches that were "BORN" from the Church of Rome during the Reformation, but held onto some of her false doctrines. And today we are seeing the Protestant churches uniting with the Roman Church again.

So "Babylon" in the Second Angel's Message encompasses the Roman Catholic system AND the Protestant churches (Mother and harlots) that have rejected God's truth and have "fallen" into apostasy.

**QUESTION: Why is it called a "city"?**

**ANSWER:** In Bible prophecy a "city" refers to a large group of people gathered under the same banner religiously; it is another designation for a religious system, a church or group of churches. For example, in referring to God's faithful followers, it is said, "*They shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the Lord: and thou shalt be called, Sought out, A city not forsaken.*" (Isaiah 62:12)

Just as the faithful are termed "*the holy people... a city not forsaken*", so are the unfaithful termed as a "*fallen... city.*" (Revelation 14:8)

The churches have been progressively falling further into apostasy by "fornicating" with the world and allowing the heathen world to influence their "worship".

Part of this apostasy is the teaching that we can be saved **IN** our sins, when the Bible clearly teaches that Jesus saves us **FROM** our sins. In other words, when we truly come to Christ Jesus and accept His righteousness for salvation, the evidence of our true faith is **turning away** from our sinful nature and **becoming obedient** to the commandments of God.

---

## **Coming union of church and state**

There is coming a time soon when this Second Angel's message will come to a **COMPLETE FULFILMENT**. That is when the earth beast of Revelation 13 (America) sets up **the image of the beast** (image of the Papal Church of Rome), as the Protestant

churches of America (like the Vatican) unite church and state to enforce "religious" laws upon the people. (For the identity of the U.S.A. in this prophecy, see Chapter 31 of this present work.)

The Vatican Papacy has through its history controlled the state and used the state to persecute dissenters. America will form an Image (likeness) to the Papacy - when the church uses the state to enforce the wishes of the church. This union of church and state will become the Image of the Beast spoken of in Revelation 13 and then we will see the Mark of the Beast being enforced.

Ancient Babylon was opposed to Israel. Babylon enticed Jerusalem into pagan customs. Babylon eventually took the whole nation of Israel captive, and only a small remnant returned to rebuild the ancient ruins.

God pronounced judgment on ancient Babylon:

*Jeremiah 51:7-9 - "Babylon hath been a golden cup in the LORD's hand, that made **all the earth drunken**: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. Babylon is suddenly **fallen** and destroyed: howl for her; take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed. We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed: **forsake her**, and let us go every one into his own country: for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up even to the skies."*

In similar fashion, **symbolic Babylon** - the **confederacy of religious powers** that dishonours God at the end of time - will lead people astray and take them captive through her numerous **false doctrines**. Today, teachings that are not found in the Bible are being taught by the Roman church, most Christian churches, and other religions around the world.

The same judgment pronounced in Jeremiah 51:8 on ancient Babylon is given to end-time Babylon in Revelation 14:8. And,

the same call given in Jeremiah 51:6 and 9 to come out of Babylon is given in Revelation 18:1-5:

*"And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is **fallen**, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For **all nations have drunk** of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, **Come out of her, my people**, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.*

The Second Angel announces the fall of modern spiritual Babylon, but the loud call to "come out of her my people" is made later. **God's people** are thus still in Babylon. It is Babylon's system of religious structures aligned against God that is condemned—not the individuals.

There are two calls out of Babylon. Just as Jesus began His ministry on earth by cleansing the temple, and also ended His ministry on earth by cleansing the temple, so there are two calls to the churches at the end of time.

The first of these calls was made at the beginning of the Advent movement around 1844, and was confined largely to America, whereas the final call will be worldwide and climax in the loud cry just prior to the closing of the day of salvation. This experience will be accompanied by a **special outpouring of the Holy Spirit, termed the latter rain.**

## ***THE THIRD ANGEL'S MESSAGE***

The Third Angel's Message is the most fearful message ever given to the world.

Revelation 14:9-12 - *“And the third angel followed them, saying **with a loud voice**, If any man **worship** the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb.”*

Here is ***evidence of God's wonderful love***. Our heavenly Father offers us life - and the freedom to choose. But in His love He alerts us as to where the wrong path leads. He wants us to know it all in advance, both good and bad, so that in seriousness we will choose the right path and enjoy eternity with Him. That's our precious Lord. ***Love gives warning.***

The Third Angel's Message is ***the final message of warning to the world***. It is filled with power and deep spiritual truths. As its significance came to be understood, the symbolism of the entire book of Revelation was unfolded.

Consider these elements of the Third Angel's Message:

- \* The Message warns against the worship of the Beast or its image and the receiving of its mark.

- \* It is a Message of separation from Babylon and its principles.
- \* God's people need not fear the judgment in this Message.

## ***WHAT IS THE BEAST'S MARK?***

---

We noted in Chapter 31 that all the world will follow the example of the U.S.A. and enforce religious laws (Rev.13:14-17) You may enter a shop with your EFTPOS card, but be told, "Your card is refused. We cannot sell to you."

*"And that no man might buy or sell, save [except] he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name." (Rev.13:17).*

Never before has it been so easy to control buying and selling. World trade, economic sanctions, EFTPOS, GAT, I.M.F., etc are just some of the ways people may be forced to accept the coming worship laws.

There is so much misunderstanding concerning the mark of the beast. This is because people are not comparing Scripture with Scripture. They are not allowing the Bible to explain itself.

It is amazing that so many people have been hoodwinked into thinking that the mark of the beast is some sort of microchip or ID card. This is more Hollywood fiction than Bible truth!

---

**The "mark of the beast" is NOT something as tame as a physical computer chip.**

Digital identification may well be linked to the enforcement of the mark of the beast - but it is not the mark itself. We may well expect governments to identify by number those who will be allowed to buy and sell. They will want to track everyone in order to force their compliance. This is where the "number"

comes in. But the number is different from the mark.

**If the "mark" is only a physical chip, for which you might be held down unwillingly while someone inserts it into you, then why is God so serious about it - even above all other sins?**

Please take note of this. Of all sins mentioned in the Bible, the most fearful threatening ever addressed to mortals is contained in the warning about the mark in Revelation:

**"If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:... Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus."** (Rev.14:9-12)

That must be a terrible sin which calls down the wrath of God unmingled with mercy.

The Bible wouldn't warn you against the mark of the beast *without telling you* what it is.

Men are not to be left in darkness concerning this important matter; the warning against this sin is to be given to the world before the visitation of God's judgments, that all may know why they are to be inflicted, and have opportunity to escape them.

*From the Bible itself* you can discover what it is. The same Bible passage that warns against the mark, gives us the clue to identify it.

**A serious spiritual issue**

The mark of the beast is not a physical issue, but a serious spiritual issue.

Although the events of this prophecy will have physical results, yet the prophecies of Revelation chapters 13 and 14 are given in symbols.

- \* The first beast is a symbol of a political religious power.
- \* The second beast is likewise a symbol.
- \*The "sea" is symbolic.
- \*The "earth" is symbolic.
- \*The "image" formed by the second beast so it becomes like the second beast is not a physical image but a symbolic likeness to it.
- \* The beast's mark is likewise symbolic.
- \* The seal, or mark, of God also is not physical but symbolic.

Yes, from the Bible we can discover that the actual mark of the beast is NOT a physical but a spiritual issue.

Do the three angels' messages give us the clue? YES!

### ***GOD'S MARK AND BEAST'S MARK ARE OPPOSITES***

1. The First Angel's Message (Revelation 14:6-7) says **"WORSHIP God as Creator"** - How do you worship Him **AS CREATOR?** Worship means to obey. The declared **MARK** of God's authority as Creator is Sabbath worship. And this Revelation 14 prophecy, immediately follows up by quoting from the Sabbath commandment of Exodus 20.8. You worship God by honouring that memorial which He commanded.

2. The Third Angel's Message (Revelation 14:9-12) says **"Don't WORSHIP the beast."** How do you worship the beast? Worship means to obey. You worship the beast by obeying the

beast's mark of authority.

Now notice the very next verse in this prophecy:

Revelation 14:12 - *"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep **the commandments of God**, and the faith of Jesus."*

That is **God's answer to the mark of the beast**.

- \* So First Angel's Message **quotes from the 7th day Sabbath commandment** and links it to *worshipping* God.
- \* Then the Third Angel's Message warns against the **mark of the beast** (and links it to *worshipping* the beast)
- \* Then we are immediately informed that those who don't take "the mark of the beast" are those who keep "**the commandments of God**" and the faith of Jesus.

So **the mark of the beast** has to do with **our WORSHIP**.

Before going any further, we need to address an important question:

QUESTION: Don't most Christians now keep Sunday in honor of Christ's resurrection instead of God's 7th day?

ANSWER: Today, many do. But nowhere did Jesus tell anyone to do that. In fact, you will not find a command to observe Sunday anywhere in the Bible.

Look at what Jesus said about traditions taking the place of God's commandments:

*"Thus have ye made the commandments of God of none effect by your traditions... In vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men."* (Matt.15:6-9)

Sunday is just a tradition of men. It is **not biblical**. In fact, this is admitted:

**PRESBYTERIAN:** *"There is no word, no hint in the New Testament about abstaining from work on Sunday."* (C.Eyton in *The Ten Commandments*)

**BAPTIST:** *"There is no Scriptural evidence of the change of the Sabbath institution from Saturday to the first day of the week."* (Dr E.T. Hiscox, author of *Baptist Manual*)

**METHODIST:** *"The reason we observe the first day instead of the seventh is based on no positive command. One will search the Scriptures in vain for authority for changing from the seventh day to the first."* (C.G. Chappell, *Ten Rules For Living*)

**CONGREGATIONAL:** *"There is not a single line in the New Testament to suggest that we incur any penalty by violating the supposed sanctity of Sunday."* (Dr R.W. Dale, *The Ten Commandments*, pp.106-107)

**ANGLICAN:** *"We are commanded to keep the seventh; but we are nowhere commanded to keep the first day."* (Isaac Williams, *Plain Sermons on the Catechism*, pp.334-336)

**ROMAN CATHOLIC:** *"It is well to remind the Presbyterians, Baptists, Methodists, and all other Christians, that the Bible does not support them anywhere in their observance of Sunday. Sunday is an institution of the Roman Catholic Church, and those who observe the day observe the commandment of the Catholic Church."* (Priest Brady, in an address reported in the *Elizabeth, New Jersey, News*, March 18, 1903)

**ROMAN CATHOLIC:** *"The Protestant proclaiming the Bible to be the only guide of faith, has no warrant for observing Sunday. In this matter the Seventh-day Adventist is the only consistent Protestant."* (*The Catholic Universe Bulletin*, Aug.14, 1942, p.4)

## ***THE MARK OF THE BEAST VERSUS THE SEAL OF GOD***

After warning against the mark of the beast (Revelation 14:9-11), the prophecy immediately identifies those who do **NOT** receive the mark as "*they that keep the commandments of God.*" (verse 12)

The mark, or "seal of God" is connected with obedience to God's law:

Isaiah 8:16 - "*Seal the law among my disciples.*"

Deuteronomy 6:1,6-8 - "*And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a **sign upon thine hand**, and they shall be as frontlets **between thine eyes.***" (In their hand and forehead - in the same places that the antichrist will place its mark.)

Deuteronomy 10:13,18 - "*And it shall come to pass, if ye shall hearken diligently unto **my commandments** which I command you this day, to love the LORD your God, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul. Therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a **sign upon your hand**, that they may be as frontlets **between your eyes.***"

Ezekiel 9:4 - "*And the LORD said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and **set a mark upon the foreheads** of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof.*"

Hebrews 8:10 - *"I will put my laws **into their mind**, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people."*

Revelation 7:3 - *"Saying, Hurt not the earth,...till we have **sealed** the servants of our God in their foreheads."*

Ezekiel 20:12,20 - *"I gave them my sabbaths, to be **a sign** between me and them, that they might know that I am the LORD that sanctify them.... And hallow my sabbaths; and they shall be **a sign between me and you**, that ye may know that I am the LORD your God."*

Exodus 31:13 - *"Verily **my sabbaths ye shall keep**: for it is **a sign** between me and you through your generations; that ye may know that **I am the LORD that doth sanctify you.**"*

Notice that **God says the Sabbath is the sign, or mark, of our sanctification** - being holy in our lives before God. Obedience is the fruit of our love to God. The Sabbath is not only for rest, but to focus on God, worship Him and receive blessings. God declares that the seventh day **Sabbath is the sign of God's authority** over our lives, just as **Rome declares that Sunday observance is the sign of Rome's authority** over all men.

In speaking of God's law, notice the contrast with the mark of the beast that goes into the forehead or hand:

Exodus 13:9 - *"It shall be for a SIGN unto thee upon thine **HAND**, and for a memorial **BETWEEN THINE EYES** [forehead], that the Lord's law may be in thy mouth."*

The **seal of God is His symbol, His identifying sign, His label.**

Isaiah 8:16 - *"**Seal the law** among my disciples."*

As with the laws of man, so is the Law of God sealed. **Every seal contains three features:**

1. The name of the lawgiver
2. His office
3. The territory over which has jurisdiction.

There is only one place in the Law of God where you will find **the seal**. That is in **the fourth of the ten commandments**, and nowhere else. Here it is:

Exodus 20:8-11 - *"Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the sabbath of **the LORD thy God**: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: for in six days **the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is**, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it."*

1. **His name** - "the LORD thy God"
2. **His office: Creator** - "the LORD made..."
3. **His territory** - "heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is"



There you have it - **God's SEAL in His Law.**

The **sign, seal, or mark of God** in His Law is revealed in the **loving** observance of the seventh-day Sabbath, the Lord's own specified memorial of Creation.

So **what is the mark of the beast?** Well, first we need to ask, **what is the beast?** The Roman Vatican system is the beast (see Chapter 29). Then what is its mark?

Just as God Himself has made the seventh day Sabbath (Saturday) **the "sign" or mark of His sovereignty** over us, since He created this world, so, by contrast, does the “beast” power today boast that its pushing up of the pagan SUN-day to replace God's 7th day Sabbath command, is a “mark” of Rome's authority over the whole world. Please notice:

*"Sunday is our **MARK** of authority...the church is above the Bible, and this transference of Sabbath observance is proof of that fact."* (Catholic Record of London, Ontario, September 1, 1923)

*"Of course the Catholic Church claims that **the change** (Saturday Sabbath to Sunday) **was her act...And the act is a **MARK** of her ecclesiastical authority in religious things."*** (From the office of Cardinal Gibbons, through Chancellor H.F. Thomas, November 11, 1895)

*"Sunday is **the **MARK**** of Christian identity."* (Cardinal Sean Patrick O'Malley, 1st June 2012)

The Lord's Day Alliance of America follows suit. On its website Rev. Dr. Demetrios E. Tonia has an article, "*Sunday as a **MARK** of Christian Unity*". (<http://www.ldausa.org/lda/sunday-as-a-mark-of-christian-unity> - 2016)

**"THE MARK OF HIS NAME"**

The Bible says that the mark of the beast is the “**MARK OF HIS NAME.**” (Revelation 14:11)

**QUESTION:** *What NAME or title does every pope take when he is crowned to be pope?*

**ANSWER:** The Pope claims to be *Vicarius Filii Dei*, “the vicar of the Son of God”. That means “*In place of the Son of God*” – “*in place of Christ*”. This **name or title** is given to every Pope at his crowning.

Did you know that the term “*anti*” in “*Anti-Christ*” does **not** mean “against” but “*in place of*”?

So when the pope at his coronation receives the title *Vicarius Filii Dei*, he is accepting a name which means “*antichrist*”!

But what about the “*mark of his name*”?

**As proof of his claim that he is truly *Vicarius Filii Dei* - that he stands instead of Christ - he points to the fact that if he was not *Vicarius Filii Dei* he could not have done what he has done - he has changed Christ’s Bible Sabbath to Sunday.** Surely this is conclusive proof that he stands in Christ’s place! He *must* be authorised as Christ’s stand-in Vicar, otherwise how could he have validly made such a vital change in God’s law?

So **the proof** that he deserves this name *Vicarius Filii Dei* is in the fact that he has cancelled God's day - the Sabbath - and replaced it with his own day - Sunday. **This makes Sunday, when enforced by law, the MARK of his - the pope's - authority!**

To repeat, “**Sunday**” observance is, therefore, **the proof or mark** of his “vicarship”. It is “**the MARK OF HIS NAME**”.

The **NUMBER** of his name is 666 (as we saw in Chapter 29). The **MARK** of his name is *enforced* **SUN**day worship.

## **"IN THE FOREHEAD OR HAND"**

But the mark is received in the forehead or hand. How can you get Sunday in your head or hand?

The forehead is the frontal lobe part of the brain, where decisions are made. The forehead represents the mind (Hebrews 10:16). When Sunday worship is enforced by law, those who give intellectual assent to it and choose to keep Sunday as a religious institution instead of God's holy 7th day Sabbath will receive the mark **in their forehead**.

The hand represents work (Ecclesiastes 9:10). Those who know God's commandment, but go along with man's law simply so they can buy and sell or because they don't want to lose their jobs, are said to receive it **in their hand**, the symbol of work.

*Revelation 14:9 - "...If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark **in his forehead, or in his hand...**"*

## **"NOT ALLOWED TO BUY OR SELL"**

Did you know that the possibility of enforcing a future Sunday law with buy-or-sell sanctions has already been considered?

*"We, the Sabbath [he means Sunday] Union, W.C.T.U., all the churches, and the Y.M.C.A., are laboring with all our might to carry **the religious Sabbath** with our right arm, and **the civil Sabbath** with our left. Hundreds of thousands will receive it as a religious institution [in the forehead], and all the rest will receive it as a civil institution [in the hand], and thus we will sweep in the whole nation." (Rev.W.F.Crafts, in Sunday Union Convention, Wichita, Kansas, Sept.20, 1889)*

Remember, Bible prophecy says that economic pressure will be used...

*"...that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark..."* (Revelation 13:17)

And this has already been suggested by Sunday law advocates:

*"There is a class of people who will not keep the Christian Sabbath [he means the pope's Sunday]... If we would say **WE WILL NOT SELL anything to them, WE WILL NOT BUY anything from them**, we will not work for them, or hire them to work for us, the thing could be wiped out, and all the world would keep the Christian Sabbath."* (Rev. Bascom Robins, sermon in Burlington, Kansas, Sunday, January 31, 1904)

**QUESTION:** Do some people have the mark of the beast already?

**ANSWER:** No one has the mark of the beast yet. This will occur only when it is enforced by law and the Loud Cry goes out against it and people are forced to make a conscious decision. When church and state unite **to enforce Sunday**, it will cause men and women everywhere to face the test. The issue will then become the Law of God versus the law of man. Everyone will have to decide between man

Those who at that time **choose the tradition of man above the command of God at that time**, by doing so, they are worshipping the beast, and **receive his mark**. That's why God in His love issues a divine call to action.

Christians of past generations observed the Sunday, supposing that in so doing they were keeping the Bible Sabbath, and there are now true Christians in every church, including the Roman Catholic communion, who honestly believe that Sunday is the Sabbath of divine appointment. God accepts their sincerity of purpose and their integrity before him.

God overlooks transgression of His law done in ignorance. "*The times of ignorance God winks at*" (Acts 17:30).

But *when Sunday observance shall be enforced by law*, and the world shall be enlightened concerning the obligation of the true Sabbath, then *whoever shall transgress the command of God, to obey a precept which has no higher authority than that of Rome, will thereby honour popery above God*. He is paying homage to Rome, and to the power which enforces Rome's institution. **He is worshipping [obeying] the beast and his image**. As men then reject the institution God has declared to be the sign of his authority, and honor instead that which Rome has chosen as the token of her supremacy, they will thereby accept **the sign of allegiance to Rome—"the mark of the beast."** To repeat: *it is not until the issue is thus plainly set before the people, and they are brought to choose* between the law of God and the law of men, that those who continue in transgression will receive "the mark of the beast."

*"If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin."* (John 15:22)

*"If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth."* (John 9:41)

*"To him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin."* (James 4:17)

The question we must individually answer before God is this:

- \* **Do we accept the authority of Jesus Christ** as Creator (of which the seventh day Sabbath is the sign, or emblem), **or**
- \* **Do we accept the authority of Rome the antichrist** (whose sign of authority is Sunday worship)?

That's the issue. We must each personally decide under whose banner we will stand.

God's servants will confirm God's laws.

As the apostles went forth to proclaim the gospel, according to the commission entrusted to them (see Matt. 28:19, 20), they were to *teach converts "to observe all things whatsoever" Christ had commanded* - no more and no less.

Jesus states it loud and clear:

*"Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the Kingdom of Heaven, but he who **does the will of my Father in Heaven**. Many will say to me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name, cast out demons in your name, and done many wonders in your name?' And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from me, you who practice lawlessness!'"* (Matthew 7:21-23)

To refuse to look at truth when it is placed before me, means I am rejecting it. God's grace covers me - until I decide.

Prophecy declares that the first angel will make his announcement to *"every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people."* Likewise, the third angel's warning, part of the same threefold message, will be proclaimed with *"a loud voice"*, to command the attention of **the whole world**.

In this issue, the whole Christian world will be divided into *two great classes*,—those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus (Revelation 14:12), and those who worship the beast and his image and receive his mark (verses 9-11).

Although **church and State will unite their power to compel** *"all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond,"* to receive *"the mark of the beast,"* (Revelation 13:16), yet the people of God will not receive it.

## **The distinguishing test**

More than any other of God's commandments, whoever obeys the fourth commandment will find that a separating line is drawn between him and the world. The Sabbath is a test, not a human requirement, but **God's test**. It is that which will distinguish between those who serve God and those who serve Him not. And upon this point will come the last great conflict of the war between truth and error.

As the disrespect for God's law becomes more blatant, the line of demarkation between its observers and the world becomes more distinct. Love for the divine precepts increases with one class, while contempt for them increases with the other class.

The worshippers of God will be especially distinguished by their regard for the fourth commandment. The unfaithful worshippers will be distinguished by their efforts to tear down the Creator's memorial. All Christendom will be divided into two distinct classes.

You notice that the mark of the beast is a **direct opposite** from the law of God. The mark is a SPIRITUAL issue, not physical. To obey the law of one you have to disobey the law of the other.

*"Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?" Romans 6:16*

When the two groups, the obedient and the disobedient, become distinct (as the ripened wheat and tares - Matthew 13:30), then comes the "harvest" of this world.

*"The eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers; but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil." (1 Peter 3:12)*

Right now the Papacy is pushing for a Sunday law to be enforced, and many Protestants in America are now pushing for Sunday laws too. And what does it say in Revelation 13? That

the *second beast* (America) causes the world to take the mark of the *first beast* (the mark of the Roman Catholic system).

At this very same end time, Jesus reveals that His saints will be "*keeping the commandments of God*". Why? Because they have fully submitted their lives to Jesus Christ and are clothed with **His righteousness**. It is Jesus IN them (Galatians 2:20) that has changed them and their faith is a true **obedient** faith through Christ's own righteousness.

So if we are faithful, with the power of His Holy Spirit living in us, enabling us to be victorious in the keeping of God's ten commandments, then we do not get the mark. **It is about our worship, faith and allegiance to God.**

### ***LET'S SUMMARISE***

1. The **beast** is a **political power, ridden by a religious organization** (see Chapters 17 and 29).
2. That power is the **Papacy** (see Chapters 17 and 29).
3. **The Bible would not warn you against the mark of the beast without telling you what it is. From the Bible itself you can discover what it is.**
4. **The beast's mark is directly opposite from God's mark** (see pages 335 to 341).
5. The Papacy's *boasted mark of authority* is that it has **defied God's Sabbath command (God's mark of Creatorship) and imposed in its stead its own SUN-day by law**, and the whole world falls into line under this papal flag (mark of authority).
6. When this is enforced by law, the final test will be whether you choose to **obey God** - and can be trusted to live in harmony with Him forever - **OR** whether you choose rather to **obey man**

- knowing full well the consequences of your choice...

At that time, the Sabbath will become the great test of *loyalty*.

# 35

## SEVEN ANGELS

### CONNECT IT ALL

*"And I beheld, and heard **an angel** flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabitants of the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are yet to sound!"*  
(Revelation 8:13)

*"And I saw **another mighty angel** come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire."*  
(Revelation 10:1)

*"And I saw **another angel** fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people."*  
(Revelation 14:6)

*"And there followed **another angel**, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication." (Revelation 14:8)*

*"And the third angel **followed them**, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand." (Revelation 14:9)*

*" And after these things I saw **another angel** come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory." (Revelation 18:1)*

*"And I saw **an angel** come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand." (Revelation 20:1)*

Within the context of the three woes there are seven angel messengers to the world.

The first words of the Third Angel's Message are "*And the third angel followed them.*" (Revelation 14:9)

Tracing backward from the Third Angel's Message we read "*And I saw another angel.*" (v.8)

Tracing backward from the Second Angel's Message we read "*And I saw another angel.*" (v.6)

Tracing backward from the First Angel's Message we find no angel except the Third Woe Angel, until we come to "*another mighty angel.*" (Revelation 10:1)

Following yet further back, we find no angels except the First and Second Woe angels, until we reach Chapter 8:13 - "*And I beheld, and heard an angel*" - not another angel, but, primarily, "*an angel*".

Thus, beginning with Revelation 8:13, there is *an unbroken series of angels* connected by the word "another", straight through to the Third Angel of Revelation 14. Thus:

- \* "*And I beheld, and heard an angel*" (Revelation 8:13)
- \* "*And I saw another mighty angel*" (Revelation 10:1)
- \* "*And I saw another angel*" (Revelation 14:6)
- \* "*And there followed another angel*" (Revelation 14:8)
- \* "*And the third angel followed them*" (Revelation 14:9)

So this sequence of angels (in which the Third Angel's Message is central) *begins with* the angel who announces the *three woes*.

**The first angel announces the three woes.** The **First Woe** deals with the spread of **Islam**, the **Second Woe** advances the **same concept**. With what is the **Third Woe** connected?

We find here a **direct link between the rise and spread of**

**Islam and the Third Angel's Message.** This is not in any way a deviation from the message concerning the beast power, but an **extension** of the same teaching.

AN IMPORTANT QUESTION: **Why** would God purposely begin the **chain of prophecies** that includes **the Third Angel's Message with** the announcement of **the three woes?**

THERE IS ONLY ONE LOGICAL ANSWER: The rise and spread of **Islam** is directly **involved with** the giving of what is called **the Third Angel's Message.**

We know that **the Papacy is behind all** that is being done, but what they are doing in the open is a smokescreen. They are working through other instruments, so as not to expose themselves for what they really are.

Satan is not stupid, and we are warned that if it were possible he would deceive even the very elect. What we need to understand is **the catalyst that is being instigated** and formed by the Papacy to create an image (likeness) to the Beast, and why that Image will then pass the coming Sunday law and finally the death decree.

**The Third Woe** deals with the **spread of Islam and its influence on the Image of the Beast** power and the death decree with the **Papacy** instigating the movements from **behind the scenes.**

**At the end of the Second Woe** there was a great **disappointment**, when thousands of Christians who were studying the book of Daniel misinterpreted a prophecy that was due to occur in 1844.

They had the date right. But there was a misinterpretation of the event. This caused a mighty sifting and shaking among the people. Those whose faith survived this time of testing were told

to give the last message and final warning to the world:

Revelation 10:11 - "*And he said unto me, **Thou must prophesy again** before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.*"

Matthew 24:14 - "*And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*"

Revelation 14:6 - "*And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people.*"

**The timing** of the **Third Woe** coincides perfectly with the giving of the **Third Angel's Message**. In Revelation, especially in chapters 11,14,16,18 and 20, we are given events that will transpire during the Third Woe.

Revelation 11:14 - The second woe is past; and, behold, the third woe cometh quickly [suddenly, unexpectedly].

Inserted into this is what is called ***an inversion***. (verses 15-17) The angel begins by foretelling the eternal reign of Jesus, then declares that He "*hast taken to [Himself His] great power, and hast reigned.*" This is ***looking forward*** to the time when all troubles are over, at the end of the coming millennium.

**Then** the angel ***brings us back through the way-marks that lead up*** to the eternal reign of Christ.

vv.15-17 - And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

Then the angel presents **the event** that marks the opening of the Third Woe period, which was **the opening of the Temple of God (His sanctuary) in heaven, to the understanding of His people on earth.**

v.19 - And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament.

The **Third Woe** events described in Revelation 11:14-19 are **identical with** those mentioned in the **Three Angels' Messages** of Revelation 14:6-20

Rev.11:18 - "And thy wrath is come"	Rev.14:9,10 - "wrath of God"
Rev.11:18 - "the time... that they should be judged"	Rev.14:6-7 - "the hour of his judgment is come"
Rev.11:18 - "that thou shouldst give reward"	Rev.14:14,16 - "and the earth was reaped"
Rev.11:18 - "and shouldst destroy them which destroy the earth"	Rev.14:17-19 - "cast... into the great wine-press of the wrath of God"
Rev.11:19 - "And there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament [the ten commandments]"	Rev.14:12 - "Here are they that keep the commandments of God"

This is the time when **the "mystery of God" (the gospel) is close to finishing.** (Revelation 10:7)

The Third Angel's Message is ***the gracious call of God*** to all men, who offers to supply the power to all to overcome sin, become in character like Jesus, so as to receive the seal of God, have their names in the Book of Life, and be delivered in the final time of trouble. Is your name in the Book of Life?

## 36

# THE THIRD WOE

Ample information is given concerning the first two woes so that we can determine who is involved in the Third Woe. It is the same power that is described in the first and second woes.

Past history will be repeated. *"The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun."* (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

The characteristics of the First Woe, combined with the characteristics of the Second Woe, give us the characteristics of the Third Woe. It makes sense that the Third Woe is a repetition of the first two, only enlarged to a worldwide extent. We just need to let the Bible explain itself.

Compare these two passages:

\* Revelation 9:3-4 - *"And there came out of the smoke **LOCUSTS** upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.*

*And it was commanded them that they should **NOT hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.**"*

\* Revelation 7:1-3 - *"And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding **the four WINDS** of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.*

*And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, Saying, **Hurt NOT the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in***

*their foreheads."*

We have already seen that the locusts of Revelation 9 are radical Islam. Now we see virtually the same language used to describe the power in Rev 9:4 as is used to describe the power in Rev 7:3, hinting that the power is the same.

This same Bible principle operates when one compares Daniel 7:8 with Revelation 13:5. A power is described in

\* Daniel 7:8 with "*a mouth speaking great things*"  
and then again in

\* Revelation 13:5 with "*a mouth speaking great things*".  
Do you think this is coincidence, or did God do that on purpose - to tell us that the power in Daniel 7:8 is the same power as in Revelation 13:5?

From the many identification points given in each of these two prophecies, it becomes obvious that both describe the same power - the Papacy.

Here is another example of this principle:

- \* Isaiah 40:3 - "*The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.*"
- \* Matthew 3:3 - "*For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.*"
- \* John 1:23 - "*He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.*"

Each passage speaks of the same person, John the Baptist, but with a slight variation of language. (In the last two quotes the word "desert" is not mentioned.)

Now compare again Revelation 9 and Revelation 7:

Rev.9:3-4	Rev.7:1-4
<b>v.3 LOCUSTS</b>	<b>v.1 FOUR WINDS</b>
v.4 Not hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree	v.3 Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees
v.4 Only those which have not the seal of God in their foreheads	v.4 Till we have sealed servants of our God in their foreheads

In these parallel passages the words are almost exactly the same, but with a slight, subtle difference:

- \* In Revelation 9 the sea is not mentioned - because the warring was against a **single** power.
- \* In Revelation 7 the sea is mentioned. Sea represents nations **plural**: "*The waters... are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues*" (Rev.17:15), which is what will be involved this time (world war) when the **4 winds of the earth** are released.

What do "**winds**" represent? **War!**

Jeremiah 49:36-37 - "*And upon Elam will I bring **the four winds** from the four quarters of heaven, and will scatter them toward all those winds; and there shall be no nation whither the outcasts of Elam shall not come.*

*For I will cause Elam to be **dismayed before their enemies**, and before them that seek their life: and I will bring evil upon them, even my fierce anger, saith the LORD; and I will send **the sword** after them, till I have consumed them."*

*"**The four winds** of heaven striving upon the great sea represent the terrible scenes of **conquest and revolution***

*by which kingdoms have attained to power." (The Great Controversy, p.439.3)*

Although the nations are mustering their forces for **war and bloodshed**, the command to the angels is still in force, that they hold **the four winds** until the servants of God are sealed in their foreheads.

**The four winds are represented as an angry horse**, seeking to break loose and rush over the whole earth, bearing destruction and death in its path. (20 MR 217.1). Did you notice earlier what symbol the Bible used to represent the Muslims in the first and second woes? It is an angry horse. (See chapters 26 and 27.)



So four winds being held back is in fact militant Islam being restrained from causing destruction over the face of the earth.

## **1st AND 2nd WOE EVENTS REPEATED IN THE 3rd WOE**

### **1. Muslim power will be "loosed"**

Just as in the Second Woe the four "angels" (messengers) that were loosed was the **loosing of the Muslim power**, so in the

Third Woe four angels **will loose** the four winds which are **the Muslim power**.

## 2. Will fight Rome's "army"

During the First Woe and the Second Woe, militant Islam was fighting the forces of Rome.

In today's Third Woe, **who is the army of Rome? America**. Obviously, Rome doesn't have an army of her own today, so, to do her work, she uses a world power. (America is described in Bible prophecy as the second "beast" which will eventually promote the wishes of the first "beast", the Roman Vatican (Revelation 13).

## 3. Will cause distress of nations

Just as **Islam** caused the **distress of nations** under the Second Woe, so too do they cause the **distress of nations** under the Third Woe.

*Revelation 11:14,18 - "The second woe is past; and, behold, the third woe cometh quickly[suddenly, unexpectedly]... And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged..."*

## 4. Will "torment"

When the Second Woe began, it was commanded to take off the restraints which had been imposed upon the Muslim forces, by which they were restricted to the work of "tormenting men", and their commission was enlarged so as to permit them to "slay the third part".

The Roman empire declines, as it arose, by conquest. But the Saracens and Turks were the instruments by which a false religious system was scourged.

When the Third Angel's message (Rev.14) closes, those who refuse to accept the seal of God will then receive the mark of the beast. They will then become conscious of their final separation from God, and **this will torment them** until they have no rest day nor night":

*Revelation 14:10-11 - The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:*

*And the smoke of their **torment** ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no **rest day nor night**, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name."*

The Third Woe deals with the judgment that is to fall **upon the rebellious church systems of our day. The "instruments" that God will use now will be the same** as He used in the past.

### SUMMARY OF THE 3 WOES

Revelation 9 <b>1st Woe</b>	Revelation 9 <b>2nd Woe</b>	Revelation 11:14-19 <b>3rd Woe</b>
Muhammed - Arabia	Ottoman Turks	Resurrected Caliphate
<b>Warfare against armies of Rome July 27,1299 to July 27, 1449 (150 years)</b>	<b>Warfare against armies of Rome July 27,1449 to August 11, 1840 (391 yrs 15 days)</b>	<b>Warfare against armies of Rome's New World Order</b>
Attacked violently and suddenly	Attacked violently and suddenly	Attack violently and suddenly

<b>Islam teaches that this was the time period of the 1st JIHAD</b>	<b>Islam teaches that this was the time period of the 2nd JIHAD</b>	<b>Islam teaches that we are in the time period of the 3rd JIHAD</b>
---	---	--

The Third Woe began when the Second Woe ended. There may appear to be a delay between the Second Woe and the resurgence of Islam in the Third Woe. But there is a reason for this.

Jesus says that *"as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man."* (Luke 17:26) *"The longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing."* (1 Peter 3:20)

As, in the days prior to the Great Flood, God's mercy lingered before judgment fell, so again, God's mercy is waiting. Our loving God is holding back the final time of trouble, described as "the four winds" (see Chapter 39 of this present work), allowing more time for a rebellious world to receive His final message of warning (known as the three angels' message).

*For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: though it tarry, **wait for it; because it will surely come.**"* (Habakkuk 2:2-3)

The Third Woe is to occur as the final gospel call goes to the world, followed by the seven last plagues and Jesus' return.

**OF INTEREST:** Did you notice? The same periods prophesied in the Bible as the THREE WOES are also recognised by Muslim spokesmen to be the periods of their THREE JIHADS.

What does "jihad" mean? While "jihad" can mean peaceful victory for the ideals of Islam, the above three jihads are generally understood to refer to mean armed conflict.

## 37

# WHO SET UP THE STATE OF ISRAEL?

Israel's prime minister as I write is Benjamin Netanyahu, a likeable, pleasant personality, However, many Christian Zionists (in fact, most people) are not aware that this gentleman is a member of the Vatican-run Mizraim Masonic organization which is dedicated to Lucifer.

Nor are most aware of the identity of those who set up the state of Israel and are running it, and why. So the following facts could be an eye-opener.



Before World War II, a “Jewish” satanist group (the Shabbataians) had already done a trade-off with Hitler, which resulted in 50,000 indoctrinated German Jews – their own followers – escaping to Palestine from 1933 to 1939. (Note: The Shabbataians were not real Jews.)

The rest – biblical Jews and others – were to be left in Europe at Hitler’s mercy. When the war ended, the plan was launched to attract survivors of the holocaust to the Shabbataian Zionist state of Israel – into one easy location for an eventual final holocaust.

So it was that after Hitler’s mass extermination of both Jews and Bible Christians, numerous Jews sought a new life in a promised land of safety.

Many of these were Bible-loving Torah Jews who believed they could now worship God in safety.

But they did not know about the men in the shadows and the real reason this Jewish State had been set up.

Are you ready for this? Please listen carefully to what follows from one of the world's most accurate Israeli investigators:

**Jewish Zionism** *“positively isn’t a Jewish conspiracy, but strictly Roman Catholic, who have strategically used certain Jews for their cause’s advantage.”* (Barry Chamish, *Shabtai Tzvi, Labor Zionism and the Holocaust*, p. 104)

For years Jewish families poured in, building new settlements.

Then in 1988 things in Israel began to change. Jesuit operatives took control of both the Israeli government and the military (IDF). It was the **Jesuits**, through their Zionist front men, who **now ran Israel**.

There was hatched a very shrewd plan. Military outposts were established close to the new Jewish settlements “to protect them”. Now watch what happens. The story of the new Israeli settlement of Netzarim is typical.

It was standard procedure that no soldier was allowed to be in their barracks unarmed. But on a certain day three young Israeli soldiers (two girls and an 18 year old boy) were disarmed by

their military superior and left helpless. It was done to make certain they couldn't defend themselves.

Then a so-called "terrorist" came into the base and shot those three young soldiers dead.

Then came the immediate calls to disband Netzarim "because it's too dangerous for our soldiers to serve there."

That was Stage One of the plan to destroy the settlements. Netzarim was demolished. The same plan was to be activated throughout Israel. Their strategy: to systematically slice off portions of Israel until Israel becomes impossible to defend.

*"Peres was going to be the instrument of a withdrawal to the '48 lines and he was **shuttling between the Washington Institute and the Vatican...the plan... Israel becomes indefensible, the foreign troops patrol the country, the Vatican gets Jerusalem.**" (Ibid., p. 143) The only way to achieve this "is to aggravate the conflict into an unsolvable bloodbath..." (Ibid., p. 131)*

A holocaust is planned to eliminate multitudes of both Jews and Muslims. Jewish Zionism, run by Roman Catholic **Jesuits** through its operatives in Israel, aims for the destruction of the true Jews.

Who is running Israel? Instead of Jews, read **Jesuits**.

This will pave the way for the Islam, also **Vatican-directed**, to take Jerusalem. In this plan, Jerusalem itself will be spared.

*Daniel 11:45 - "And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas [the Dead Sea and the Mediterranean], in the glorious holy mountain [Jerusalem]."*

(We shall also see, as we continue into later chapters, that there

is no loyalty here. Rome pulls the strings of all groups, pitting one against another for her own perceived ultimate advantage, and once one has done its job, it can be eliminated.)

As we noted, the state of Israel was set up by the High Masonic Rothschild-controlled Shabbataian Jews. Rothschild has had an alliance with the **Jesuit General** since 1876, with Adam Weishaupt. These are the same people who betrayed the Jews into the hands of the Nazis, killing many Jews all throughout Europe, betraying their own Jewish people. These are the very same powers who run the nation of Israel today.

**Rome controls the Israeli government.** It controls the Israeli government through the Mossad with some recent CIA help. We have high-level treason and betrayal of the Jewish race. Treason is there in Israel today, by their own leaders, who are loyal to Rome and the Jesuit Order. There's nothing but Knights of Malta, high-level Freemasonry, and the Jesuit Order running all of Israel.

**Jesuits** control Israel. All that's happening is according to plan.

I shall now address that statement, "Look at how little success the US has had in trying to control the people of one country, i.e. Israel."

The bottom line is this: the interaction you see between America and Israel is part of the game. Rome is directing both parties. When it is in her interests, Rome knows how to play off one against another. But when she wants something done and chooses to use one of them to order it – both will jump to obey.

The power belongs to Rome. As the prophecy says concerning the second beast: The power that "*he exerciseth*" [*uses*] is "*the power of the first beast [Rome].*" (Rev.13:12)

## The Illuminati factor

*“To you, Sovereign Grand Inspectors General (of the 33rd degree), we say this, that you may repeat it to the brethren of the 32nd , 31st and 30th degrees – The Masonic Religion should be, by all of us initiates of the high degrees, maintained in the purity of the Luciferian doctrine. ... Yes, Lucifer is God.”* (Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry* in 1871)

Benjamin Netanyahu has publicly stated that he was initiated into the Masonic Lodge while in the United States. (Israeli publication *Shishi*, Spring 1994)

The world's head mason is the pope. He wears the ephod.

There are an estimated 4,000 Israeli Freemasons, divided into 76 lodges (*The La Republica* newspaper). Most Israeli judges and religious figures are Masons. What is even more disturbing, you will find that every Mason in Israel, that includes most of the Politicians and Supreme Court Judges all are Freemasons from the Mizraim Lodge (*La Republica* newspaper). It is from the Mizraim Lodge of Freemasonry that you will find the Illuminati. It is in fact, the heart and soul of the Synagogue of Satan, the enemies of the Jewish people. So **those who have planned the destruction of Israel are now in control**, in Israel.

## 38 ISLAM CONFEDERACY FORMED

As we continue reading the prophecy of Daniel chapter 11, we notice these predictions concerning the "*king of the north*":

Daniel 11:45 - "*He shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in **the glorious holy mountain**; yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him.*"

What is "the glorious holy mountain"? Let's allow the Bible to explain itself:

Daniel 9:16 - "*Jerusalem, thy **holy mountain***"

Zechariah 8:3 - "***Jerusalem** shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the Lord of hosts **the holy mountain.***"

Jerusalem sits between the Dead Sea and the Mediterranean Sea.

Daniel tells us explicitly that the "*king of the north*" (a Muslim power) **will set up its seat of government in Jerusalem.**

**Muslims want to  
make Jerusalem  
their world capital**

On November 9, 2014, the *Jerusalem Post* reported that Sheik Kamal Khatib, deputy leader of the Islamic Movement in Israel, says **Jerusalem will soon become the capital of a global caliphate.** In an interview with the official PA TV channel, Sheik Kamal Khatib said:

*“Jerusalem will not be only the capital of the Palestinian state, but also the capital of the coming righteous Islamic caliphate” to which “the entire Earth” would “become subordinate.”* (<http://pamelageller.com/2014/10/israeli-muslim-leader-kamal-khatib-jerusalem-will-be-caliphate-capital.html/#sthash.3txE5LUo.dpuf>)

On television in Cairo, Egypt, another prominent cleric insisted, "The capital of the Caliphate - the capital of the United States of the Arabs - **it shall be Jerusalem.** Our capital shall not be Cairo, Mecca, or Medina. **It shall be Jerusalem.**"

On May 27, 2015 *JewsNews* reported on a further development:

*"President Erdogan of Turkey gave a speech of great importance that main stream media is not reporting. The Anadolu Agency, which is like the 'Reuters' of Turkey, reported on it and several Arabic sources have now picked up on it.*



*“Unfortunately we the Muslims lost our aim to **head towards Jerusalem.** The water of our eyes froze making us blind, and our hearts that was destined to beat for **Jerusalem** is now instead conditioned for rivalry being in a state of war with each other.’*

*"They have one more election to win in Turkey and if the AK Party gains enough seats in the Turkish Parliament next month, they will rewrite the Turkish constitution and put in a new presidential system that will leave Erdogan as the supreme leader (caliph) of this New Turkey. And that means, **the fight for Jerusalem will begin.**"*

On November 2, the AK Party won the critical parliamentary majority. Erdogan stated his desire to pattern his government on principles exemplified by Adolf Hitler.



Erdogan and Iranian President Hassan Rouhani have made an alliance to work together to reunite the Muslim world.  
(<http://www.jewsnews.co.il/2015/05/27/turkish-president-calls-on-muslims-to-invade-jerusalem-2/>)

On May 28, 2015, under the headline, "**Turkish Prime Minister: 'We will march to liberate Jerusalem'**", *Jerusalem On Line* reported:

*"During the inauguration of the 55th airport in Hakkari Province (named after Saladin who conquered **Jerusalem** and was an enemy of the Catholic Crusades), Turkish Prime Minister Ahmet Davutoglu and Turkish*

*President Recep Tayyip Erdogan called for the reestablishment of the Ottoman Empire...*

*"During the ceremony, both Turkish leaders spoke of their desire to **conquer Jerusalem** and to re-establish the Ottoman Empire.*

*"By Allah's will, Jerusalem belongs to the Kurds, the Turks, the Arabs, and to all Muslims," Davutoglu declared. "And as our forefathers fought side by side at Gallipoli and just as our forefathers went together to liberate Jerusalem with Saladin, **we will march on the same path to liberate Jerusalem.** The Turkish government does not differentiate from East to West. We intend to put together all of the regions of our nations and we will bring these regions back together.'*



*"Erdogan's speech was even more grandiose. He proclaimed himself to be the reincarnation of Saladin, who will kick whom he perceives to be the modern day crusaders out of Jerusalem by uniting the Muslim world*

*behind him by hinting at the re-establishment of the Ottoman Empire: "I am sure that the great commander Saladin is bringing together all of the peoples of the Middle East into the one army that defeated the Crusaders...'*

*"'Jerusalem is for the Muslims and not for Israel,' Erdogan added. 'Why should we continue to be friends with those that stomped their boots on the Temple Mount? They insist that we have to be friends? I say, we will not... Allah witnesses this. One people, one flag, one nation and one state!'"* (<http://www.jerusalemonline.com/news/middle-east/israel-and-the-middle-east/turkish-prime-minister-we-will-march-to-liberate-jerusalem-13709>)

But to do this they would have to wipe Israel off the map.

The Charter of Hamas was published in 1988. The preamble of the Charter quotes Imam Hassan al-Banna, who said, *"Israel will exist and will continue to exist until Islam will obliterate it, just as it obliterated others before it."*

Article 13 of the Charter says: *"There is no solution to the Palestinian problem except by Jihad. The initiatives, proposals and International Conferences are but a waste of time, an exercise in futility."*

On April 1, 2006, Hamas Foreign Minister Mahmoud Zahar said: *"I dream of hanging a huge map of the world on the wall at my Gaza home which does not show Israel on it."*

The President of Iran, Mahmoud Ahmadinejad, is quoted as saying: *"Israel must be wiped off the map."*

This echoes a biblical prophecy concerning the Arab nations around Israel:

**Psalm 83:4-5 - *"They have said, Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; that the name of Israel may be***

*no more in remembrance. For they have consulted together with one consent."*

They all have the same goal.

The "princes of the north" must first confederate together and reinstate their Caliphate, which will be the revived King[dom] of the North.

The Muslim Brotherhood, the oldest terrorist organization in the world, recognises Turkey as *the* strategic place for reestablishment of their long awaited Caliphate. According to their plans, as soon as the Caliphate is formed and a new Caliph is seated in Istanbul (ancient Constantinople), he **will declare global jihad** beginning with the annihilation of Israel and **moving his seat to Jerusalem**, and then continuing with their jihad throughout the world.

Let's read the Bible prophecy again:

Daniel 11:45 - *"He shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in **the glorious holy mountain**; yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him."*

**QUESTION:** Some don't think the Caliphate can ever be **resurrected** because of the deep schisms between the Sunnis, the Shias, and the Wahhabis.

**ANSWER:** They will unite under the common goal of destroying Israel and Christianity. The Muslims have an ancient axiom: "The enemy of my enemy is my friend."

In Jesus' day there was a seemingly irreconcilable division between the Pharisees, the Sadducees, and the Herodians, but they cast aside their differences and confederated together to destroy Jesus.

The prophecies of Ezekiel chapter 32 and Psalm 83 speak of a

**confederacy of all the Islamic nations** that form a crescent around Israel. this is a primary phase of the stated objective of the Muslim Brotherhood and the motivation behind all the **uprisings we are witnessing** right now in the Middle East.

In Ezekiel 32:30, this confederacy is called the "*princes of the north*", which presupposes that there must be a "*king of the north*", thus tying Ezekiel's prophecy directly to Daniel 11:45.

This king, or by inference, kingdom, can be none other than the **resurrected Ottoman empire**, ruled by the Caliphate, with a Caliph (a Mahdi) at its head.

The people clearly want a caliphate. The people clearly want Islamic law. But they do not want it under the oppressive and brutal face of ISIS. ISIS is being used to help prepare the way. The time will come when ISIS is disposed of, and Turkey will step forward as a far more appealing alternative.

Not long ago, the president of *Stratfor*, political strategist and forecaster George Friedman, highlighted Turkey as one of two countries which would receive a great deal of world attention in the near future.

## **Islam aims to fulfil prophecy**

On August 24, 2016, ex-Muslim radical Walid Shoebat announced:

*"Today Major Prophecy Was Fulfilled. The Date August 24th Is Prophetically Significant For Muslims Worldwide Sparking Islam's Caliphate Empire And Is Why Turkey Today Sent A Massive Land Invasion To Syria.*

*"What the Western media is NOT telling you is that today, August 24th, is the birthday when the Ottomans sparked*

*their takeover of the Middle East at the Battle of Dabiq, defeating the Mamluk Sultanate on August 24th, 1516, near the town of Dabiq in Syria. And it is today that began the land invasion of Turkey's largest intervention in Syria on that same day, Wednesday, August 24th, 2016, exactly 500 years to the day from when the Ottomans began their historic control over the Middle East and no one says anything about this.*

*"Today is 'Operation Euphrates Shield'!"*

*"Coincident? No. While the West is asleep, the tweets are going all over in Arabic asking why Erdogan chose this date. In the Middle East, this is clearly seen as the neo-Ottoman invasion since the start of the Syrian civil war in 2011.*

*"Behold the Turkish tanks covering the hills entering from Turkey into Syria while Erdogan speaks to the massive Turkish crowds telling them that he is accomplishing what he has promised, that Syria, Iraq, the Balkans and the Caucasus is now within reach, a speech that no one translated into English.*



*"Declaring this invasion, Erdogan spoke at his palace to massive crowds, saying:*

*"...When we speak of Syria or the Balkans or the Caucasus, these were part of our [Ottoman] geography from 100 years ago. I believe we will overcome all the obstacles in front of us, which will be the will of Allah... Turkey has a massive power and will use it..."* (<http://shoebat.com/2016/08/24/today-major-prophecy-was-fulfilled-the-date-august-24th>)

The Caliphate's seat of government will first be established in Istanbul (Constantinople), but will **swiftly move to Jerusalem as they overrun Israel** and declare global jihad. This is the stated plan of the Brotherhood, and the Bible attests to the fact that **this part of their goal will be achieved.**

Can you see how easy it is now for the Daniel 11:45 prophecy to be fulfilled and the final world events to get wrapped up?

*For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: though it tarry, **wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry.***  
(Habakkuk 2:2-3)

Wait for it and it will happen.

According to Daniel, these are events that transpire just before the gospel message to mankind closes, after which come the seven last plagues and Jesus Christ returns.



## 39

# ISRAEL INVADED

Daniel 11:45 - The king of the north "*shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain.*"

Compare with Jeremiah 1:13-16 and apply it to today:

*"And the word of the LORD came unto me the second time, saying, What seest thou? And I said, I see a seething pot [Islam?]; and the face thereof is toward the north. Then the LORD said unto me, **Out of the north** an evil shall break forth upon all the inhabitants of the land. For, lo, I will call all the families of the kingdoms of the north, saith the LORD; and they shall come, and they shall set every one his throne **at the entering of the gates of Jerusalem**, and against all the walls thereof round about, and against all the cities of Judah. And I will utter my judgments against them touching all their wickedness, who have forsaken me, and have burned incense unto other gods, and worshipped the works of their own hands."*

There can be no doubt that "the northern army" referred to here is the King of the North.

### **What is already happening in the Middle East**

In the "Arab Spring" of 2011, violent revolutions began, which overthrew dictators across the region. But now Islamic fundamentalists are gaining power. As the Muslim Brotherhood accomplishes **the overthrow of each nation in the crescent around Israel, one nation after another**, we are witnessing

milestone after milestone, that God has given us in His Word, prior to the final step depicted in Daniel 11:45.

When their objective of confederating all the Islamic nations is reached, *"he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain [Jerusalem]."* The Caliph will at the same time declare global jihad, his stated duty, and from that time on the final events will be rapid ones.

## Will Israel be destroyed?

If the *"King of the North"* moves to Jerusalem, it would seem that the nation of **Israel** would have to be **destroyed** at this time.

**QUESTION:** Is there anything in the Bible to indicate that the nation of Israel will be destroyed at this time?

**ANSWER:** Yes, a prophecy concerning the end times says:

**Amos 9:8 - "Behold, the eyes of the Lord GOD are upon the sinful kingdom, and I will destroy it from off the face of the earth."**

Compare the expression "sinful **kingdom**" with Isaiah's prophecy:

**Isaiah 1:4 - "Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity."**

A nation and a kingdom are the same thing, so, allowing the Bible to interpret itself, the sinful kingdom in Amos 9:8 is Israel. In Amos 9:8, God is speaking to Israel and saying He **will destroy the nation of Israel from off the face of the earth**. This had a fulfilment with the destruction of the ten northern tribes in the 8th century BC, and had at least a partial fulfilment in 70 AD with the Roman destruction of Jerusalem. But will it

have a complete fulfilment in our day? It would seem so.

To understand Daniel chapter 11 correctly, we must begin with chapter 10. An important statement here is this:

Daniel 10:14 - *"Now I am come to make thee understand what shall befall **thy people** in the latter days."*

This focuses the prophecy of *"the glorious holy mountain"* (Daniel 11:45) on an event that will befall the **literal nation of Israel in the end times**.

The king of the north *"shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain."*  
(Daniel 11:45)

*"The glorious holy mountain"* can only be the literal city of Jerusalem.

Daniel 9:16 - *"Jerusalem, thy **holy mountain**"*

Zechariah 8:3 - *"**Jerusalem** shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the Lord of hosts **the holy mountain.**"*

Isaiah 66:20 - *"my **holy mountain Jerusalem**"*

If the language of the Bible should be explained according to its obvious meaning, and it can be shown that up until now the prophecy of Daniel 11 has had a literal fulfilment, this would indicate that **Daniel 11:45 is literal**.

The king of the north *"shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas **in the glorious holy mountain.**"*  
(Daniel 11:45)

In the Bible, when the word "tabernacles" is used in the singular form it always means the dwelling place for God, whether on earth or in heaven. When the word is plural it invariably means

a temporary dwelling place for man. In Daniel 11:45 it means **the seat of government**.

To repeat Daniel 10:14 - *"I am come to make thee understand what shall befall **THY PEOPLE** in the latter days."* Daniel 9:24 and Daniel 11:14 also use the phrase *"thy people"* - and those who have studied the prophecy agree that in **those verses** the reference is to **literal Israel**.

To any of our friends who think this prophecy is about the symbolic "spiritual" Israel and not literal Israel, please consider this prophecy for "the latter days":

Deuteronomy 31:29 - *"For I know that after my death ye will utterly corrupt yourselves, and turn aside from the way which I have commanded you; and **evil will befall you in the latter days**; because ye will do evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke him to anger through the work of your hands."*

Moses is here speaking to literal Israel. He says evil will befall them (literal Israel) in the latter days. Then in Daniel 10:14, the heavenly angel Gabriel tells Daniel that he has

*"come to make thee understand what shall befall **THY PEOPLE** in the latter days."*

Daniel chapter 11 then leads up to and culminates in verse 45, giving a literal delineation of events which ends in the total **demise of literal Israel**.

Daniel 12:1 - *"At that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for **the children of thy people**: and there shall be a time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, **every one that shall be found written in the book.**"*

Something here needs to be noted. In Daniel 12:1 the phrase "*thy people*" no longer stands alone. It is qualified by the phrase "*the children of*". And then it is further qualified by the phrase "*every one that shall be found written in the book.*"

The term "*thy people*" is still a reference to literal Israel - but "the children of" can only mean those who are the inheritors of the promises made to literal Israel. **This qualification makes the term to have a spiritual understanding.** The inheritors of the promises are **those who through faith accept the promise of salvation through Christ.**

Galatians 3:28-29 - "*There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.*"

Romans 2:28-29 - "*For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter.*"

Romans 9:6-8 - "*Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the **children of the promise** are counted for the seed.*"

Thus "*the children of thy people*" are those who are "*in Christ*". And this is further qualified by the phrase "*every one that shall be found written in the book*" (the book of life).

But the only conclusion that can be reached, if we allow the Bible to interpret itself, is that the term "*thy people*" **without the qualifier, always refers to literal Israel.**

Thus the focus of the whole prophecy as described in Daniel 10:14 is an event that will befall **literal Israel** in the **latter days**.

This is not to say that literal Israel is still God's chosen people. They are not. The Bible is very plain that those who are "*in Christ*" ("spiritual Israel") are God's chosen people today. (And this includes some from physical Israel, and some from all other nations.

### **Why has God been doing miracles in Israel in our day?**

**QUESTION:** We know that in our day God has been working miracles on behalf of Israel. So why would He let Jerusalem be taken?

**ANSWER:** Firstly, consider this parallel concerning the whole earth: although God has worked amazing miracles for His people in all nations all over the world, yet the time must come when this evil world in which we live must be destroyed. Yet, in that destruction, God will continue to be the shield of His faithful people.

Secondly, concerning the modern state of Israel: although God has worked amazing miracles in Israel for the sake of His faithful ones who live there, yet the time must come when this evil nation in which they live must be destroyed. Yet, in that destruction, God will continue to be the shield of His faithful ones.

### **This will give impetus to the Loud Cry**

God used an event in the Middle East, depicted in Revelation chapter 9, to prove to the world that the international Advent

awakening to Bible prophecy was from its beginning inspired by Him.

In 1838 onward, one of its leaders, Josiah Litch, published an expose on Revelation chapter 9 and said that a certain event involving the Ottoman (Muslim) power in Turkey would occur on August 11, 1840.

When the exact event occurred on the very day predicted, that prophecy movement's interpretation of Revelation 9, and of the Bible, could no longer be disputed. It became known as "the prophecy that converted a thousand infidels". **It gave an impetus**, as nothing else could, **to the start of** what became known as **the Advent movement**.

It may well be that Daniel 11:45 will **give the same impetus** to the Loud Cry message **at the end of this movement**, as history winds down to its climax.

Thus every honest person can have the information they need to make the right decision and avoid the mark of the beast.

## **Evangelical expectations will be shattered**

As we have seen, Bible prophecy states that literal Israel will be destroyed "*from off the face of the earth*". (Amos 9:8)

In 70 AD Jerusalem was destroyed, but **not** "*from off the face of the earth*". It appears that Israel will receive its ultimate final destruction, for rejecting its Saviour, just as the door of mercy starts closing and Jesus prepares to end His high priestly function in heaven, prior to His Second Coming.

When this happens, this message, if published, **will destroy all Evangelical prophecies** and establish the Advent interpretation before the world.

Evangelicals preach that the people shall turn their war weapons into implements of peace, and that the whole world will be converted and that there will be a thousand years of peace on earth.

But they fail to give the prophecy in Joel 3:9-10 because it **completely refutes what they are trying so hard to prove.**

*Joel 3:9-10 - "Proclaim ye this among the Gentiles; Prepare war, wake up the mighty men, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up: Beat your **plowshares into swords** and your **pruninghooks into spears**: let the weak say, I am strong."*

## **Why physical Israel will come to an end**

Physical (literal) Israel is actually a part of what the Bible calls spiritual Babylon. Why? Because they rejected and crucified Jesus.

"**Babylon**", which means "**confusion**", is a term given in the Bible to the **end time religious confederacy** that, while honouring Jesus with its lips, has actually turned away from following His ways. Instead, it is in league with the Vatican and will, according to prophecy, suffer the same fate.

The religious system first concocted in Babylon, and thence conveyed to the ends of the earth, has been modified in different ages and lands. In religious Rome only is it now found nearly pure and entire.

Its adherents include millions of decent, honest people, who are not aware of these things. They sincerely believe that they are being fed the truth. But this controlled and mighty system is deceiving them.

For proof that literal Israel is a part of this "spiritual Babylon", just compare the following two passages.

Speaking of physical Israel, Jesus said:

*Matthew 23:32-35 - "Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: That upon you may come **all the righteous blood shed upon the earth.**"*

It is spiritual Babylon of whom it is said:

*Revelation 18:24 - "And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of **all that were slain upon the earth.**"*

In the Bible, a prophecy concerning a **local event** (in this case, the old physical Babylon) is later often enlarged upon to describe a **worldwide event** (in our day the coming destruction of spiritual Babylon). For example:

*Jeremiah 51:60-64 (speaking of ancient physical Babylon) - "So Jeremiah wrote in a book all the evil that should come upon Babylon, even all these words that are written against Babylon. And Jeremiah said to Seraiah, When thou comest to Babylon, and shalt see, and shalt read all these words; Then shalt thou say, O LORD, thou hast spoken against this place, to cut it off, that none shall remain in it, neither man nor beast, but that it shall be desolate for ever. And it shall be, when thou hast made an end of reading this book, that thou shalt bind **a stone** to it, and **cast it into the midst of Euphrates**: And thou shalt say, **Thus shall Babylon sink**, and shall not rise from the evil that I will bring upon her."*

Revelation 18:21 (concerning modern spiritual Babylon) -  
*"And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all."*

Also, "literal" and "spiritual" Babylon are both described as being **destroyed "from the north"**.

Jeremiah 50:3 - *"For out of the north there cometh up a nation against her, which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast."*

God called His people in ancient physical Babylon to "come out."

Jeremiah 50:8-9 - *"Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and be as the he goats before the flocks. For, lo, I will raise and cause to come up against Babylon an assembly of great nations from the north country: and they shall set themselves in array against her; from thence she shall be taken: their arrows shall be as of a mighty expert man; none shall return in vain."*

He makes the same call today to His people in spiritual Babylon:

Revelation 18:1-4 - *" And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of*

*the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, **Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.**"*

## **When the Caliphate is established**

The Islamic people have fought the Roman Catholic Crusades for about 1,500 years over control of Jerusalem. Bible prophecy says one final crusade is about to erupt.

The Muslim Brotherhood, instigated by the Papacy, is working to unite all Islamic nations into a Caliphate centred in Turkey. When this is accomplished, they plan to annihilate Israel and proceed to try to take the world for Allah.

**Islam conquering Jerusalem** would suddenly galvanise the whole Islamic world. It could lead to dangerous rioting and terror in Europe, America and Asia.

When we see this happening, we will know that the period of salvation is rapidly closing.



By **hearing of this event** that will befall literal Israel **before it occurs**, God's people will know that the door of mercy is about to close. Thus knowing where they stand in history will solidify their faith and prepare them for "*the time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time.*"

This will also give the faithful the ability to identify the seven last plagues as they fall, especially encouraging them to hold on during the sixth and seventh plagues.

It will also prove to the world that those who are calling, "*Come out of Babylon, my people*" do have the right message: the final warning from God.

Those giving the message will be only a small group. However, it's a big world, that's not taking much notice. But link it up to the Islam fear, and all the world will be going to sit up and take notice.

**God will** turn around these very events that the Papacy is using as a catalyst to promote her agenda, and **use these events**, depicted in Joel and Daniel 11:45, as the very means necessary to get **all who are honest in heart to finally listen** and realize what is the truth for this time.

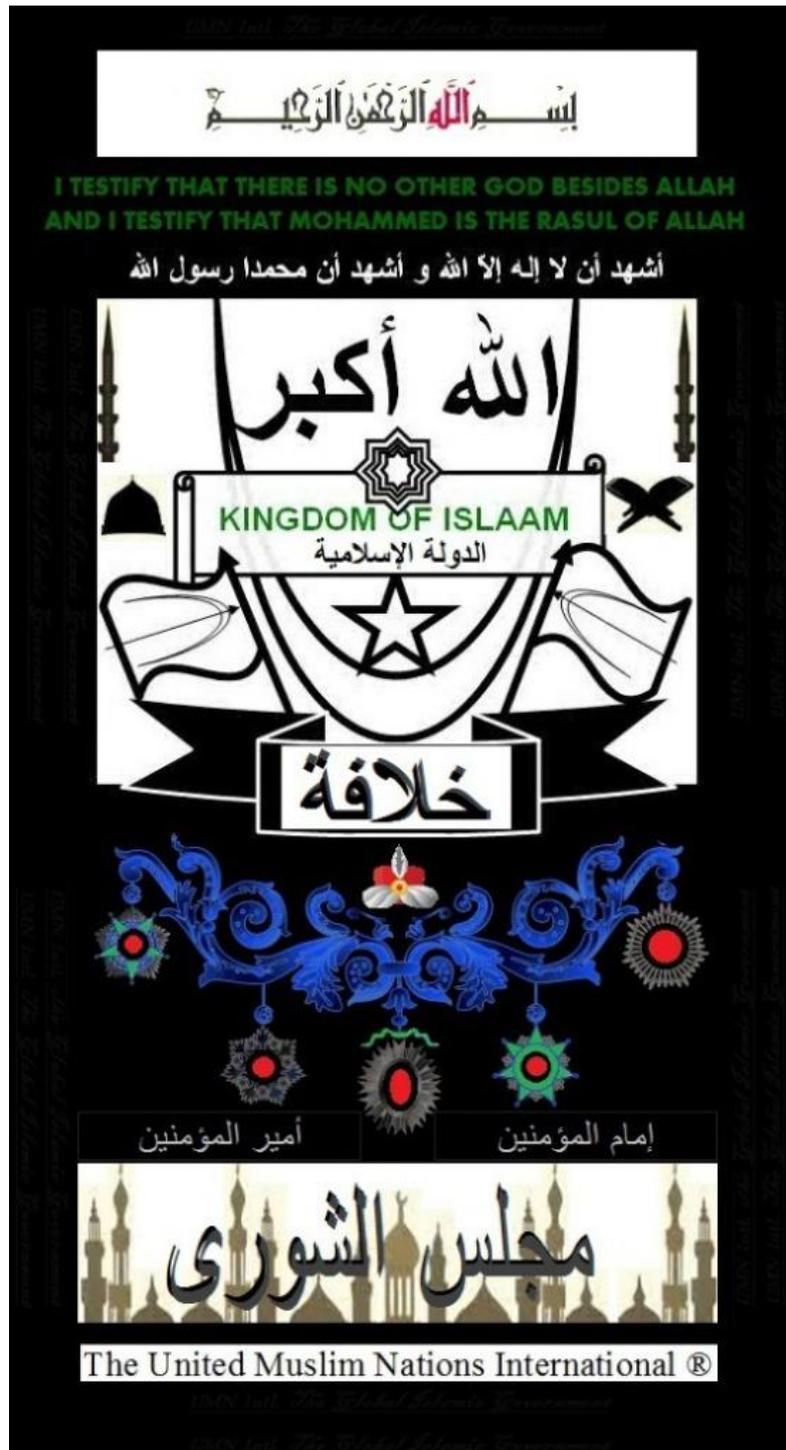
## **Muslims Pledge To 'Wipe Christianity From The Face Of The Earth'**

Meanwhile, the United Muslim Nations International has released in a 23-page booklet (pictured on the next page) its plan to "wipe Christianity from the face of the earth," Islamize the West and establish an Islamic system of world government – placing those who resist "under a police state."

"Islamic Power has returned upon the face of the earth and the Revived Global Caliphate has set eyes on the West to once and for all rid the world of Christianity and there is nothing you can

do about it,” said the organization's leader, al-Mohammedi. He makes his objective clear.

“I have pledged and made a firm promise to the Caliphate of the United Muslim Nations International organization that I will do my utmost to Islamize all of the West within a short period of time,” al-Mohammedi said.



## **The reason for the hijrah into Europe and the West**

The so-called refugee crisis is being craftily used to get hoards of young Muslim men behind the defence lines of the West - for the ultimate takeover.



**BEYOND WORDS:** Muslim terrorists force woman to watch her nine year old daughter getting raped to death



One day a beheader of women, the next day safely in Europe...but don't worry, I'm sure he's a changed man... right?



### **No stopping them**

In regard to the prophecy, *"he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas, upon the glorious holy mountain"* (Daniel 11:45), the current invasion of Europe and America is *the first step*.

Once these Western nations are infiltrated and *weakened*, they will not be able to stop the Muslims surging upon Jerusalem.

*"He [the Islamic caliphate] shall plant his seat of government in Jerusalem, but he shall come to his end and none shall help him." (Daniel 11:45)*

*"And AT THAT TIME shall Michael stand up [claim His kingdom]" (Daniel 12:1), ready to return to earth to take over.*

AT THAT TIME, God's message of mercy will begin to close. In heaven, the decree will go out:

*"He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.*

*"And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. (Revelation 22:11,12)*

From that moment onward, opportunity to be saved will be closed.

*"And there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book." (Daniel 12:1)*

The current invasion of Europe and the United States portends that the invasion of Jerusalem is coming.

Soon after Jerusalem is taken, the opportunity for mankind to accept God's mercy and be saved, comes to an end. The seven last plagues then fall, and Jesus returns.

## 40

# THE 4 WINDS PROGRESSIVELY RELEASED

At some point in time, the restraining angels will almost let go of the "four winds" (the final time of trouble, greater than the world has ever seen), but they are commanded to restrain them a little longer, so that the faithful can be sealed.

While their hands are loosening, **and the four winds are about to blow**, the merciful eye of Jesus gazes on the remnant that are not sealed, and He raises His hands to the Father and pleads with Him that He has spilled His blood for them.

Then another angel is commissioned to fly swiftly to the four angels and bid them **hold** until the servants of God are sealed with the seal of the living God in their foreheads. (Revelation 7:1-3)

Terrible destruction is forbidden to come in full. The accidents by land, sea and air; the loss of life, steadily increasing, by storm, by famine, by plagues and fires, the terrible floods, the earthquakes, **and the winds** will be the **stirring up of the nations to one deadly combat**, while, unseen, the heavenly beings hold the four winds, forbidding the terrible power of Satan to be exercised in its fury until the servants of God are sealed in their foreheads.

The four winds are finally, fully released, but it occurs **progressively**. As we draw closer to the ending of the time of mercy, you will begin to see in the news the four winds getting ready to blow again. The commencement of the prophesied "time of trouble" begins a short period before the door of mercy

closes. As the work of salvation is closing, trouble will be coming on the earth, and the nations will be angry, yet held in check so as not to prevent God's final call to His people.

*All last day events are progressive* - the coming Sunday Law, the healing of the Vatican's deadly wound, the pouring out of the Holy Spirit's latter rain, Jesus' closing work of judgment in the heavenly temple, the close of man's time of mercy, the increase of knowledge, the formation of the "image to the beast", the sealing of the faithful, the Loud Cry (which is prophesied to "swell" as it calls God's genuine people to "come out" of the ecumenical alliance of religions termed "Babylon") - all of these events are progressive. And the prophesied "time of trouble" will increase until the end.

# 41

## THE LATTER RAIN

In nature, when seed is planted in the ground, the rain helps it to start growing. This is termed the "former rain". As the crop continues to grow, rain is again required to help the crop toward maturity, ready for harvesting.

The Bible uses this terminology to describe the life of one who accepts Jesus' offer of rescue. First comes the "former rain" experience, but finally there must come the "latter rain".

*Joel 2:23 - "Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for he hath given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, the **former rain**, and the **latter rain**."*

*Hosea 6:3 - "Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the LORD: his going forth is prepared as the morning; and he shall come unto us as the rain, as the **latter and former rain** unto the earth."*

*Acts 3:19-20 - "Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the **times of refreshing** shall come from the presence of the Lord; and he shall send Jesus Christ."*

*James 5:7 - "Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the **early and latter rain**."*

**"The Former Rain"** (of the Holy Spirit) is given to all who genuinely turn from their wrongs to follow Jesus and enter into a close relationship with Him. This empowers us to live an

obedient faith and overcome those habits which separate us from Jesus.

As the closing events of history are about to take place, those whose affections are for God **above all else** will receive what the Bible calls "**the Latter Rain**". This is an extra infilling of the Holy Spirit, enabling one to remain free from sinning, and to share more powerfully God's final call of mercy to others around them.

This will prepare those who have a true relationship with Jesus to stand in the period when the seven last plagues shall be poured out.

No one can receive the Latter Rain who has not first experienced the Former Rain. To repeat, only one who has experienced the Former rain will be given the Latter Rain.

Only those who are living up to the light they have, will receive greater light. Unless we are daily advancing in developing active Christian virtues, we shall not recognize the signs of the Holy Spirit in the latter rain. It may be falling on hearts all around us, but we shall not discern or receive it.

The Latter Rain, Loud Cry and Sealing begin before the Sunday Law. In fact, they are taking place NOW.

**Now** is "*the times of refreshing*" when your sins are being "*blotted out*" (Acts 3:19). **Now** is the time that the Lord is **sealing** His people, those that will receive the Latter Rain without measure at the Sunday Law - those that **now** have no spot or stain on their characters. Who is and who is not to receive the Latter Rain is not decided later.

Although the Sabbath is the seal, or mark, of God's Creatorship, in contrast to the seal, or mark, of the beast, there is more to it than that. It is God's Holy Spirit that implants the seal upon

those who are willing.

*Ephesians 1:13 - " In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were **sealed with that holy Spirit** of promise.*

It is the Holy Spirit that is the agency who does the sealing. But this is implanted only in those who already have a relationship with Jesus and are for Him 100%.

**How your relationship is with Jesus at that time** - how your character is at the time the Sunday law (mark of the beast) is enforced - that will determine what you will decide... whether you choose to obey God, or whether you decide to go the easy way with the majority, and go along with the mark of the beast.

When the Sunday Law is passed, all those who have received the Latter Rain into their lives, these will stand bold for Christ and His truth. They will proclaim heaven's message. By thousands of voices, all over the earth, the warning will be given.

## **Let's get practical**

I know all about compromise. When the craving for that one cherished sinful act gets too much, it is easy to say, "I'll just do it today and then from tomorrow, I'll give up for good." Or, "At the end of the month I'm gonna quit". "New Years Day I'm gonna give that up." And why did I always, year after year go through that same pattern. Well, many reasons, I didn't love Christ enough, or in the right, unselfish way. I lacked in faith. I wasn't submitted.

**NOW** is the time to overcome every spot and stain on my character through Christ.

*If you wait* until the mark of the beast is enforced, you will have wakened up at the Loud Cry, as in Jesus' parable of the foolish sleeping virgins, "Behold the Bridegroom Cometh" *without the character* represented by the oil, and you will be a lost and foolish virgin.

**NOW** is the time. If the mark of the beast was imposed today, and you knew your time of **developing** your character to make the right stand, was closed, what would you say? What would you say if your probation **REALLY** closed today? All the years you might have believed that "one day" you will quit that "little" sin. And every day you "*know*" you will be eventually making it to heaven, you just need to quit that little sin; maybe tomorrow.

But now, imagine your probation has closed on you, because you waited for the Sunday Law before you would fully submit, would you cry out, "If only I had six more months!! I would put every effort into submitting myself daily to Christ, and in six months I could be ready!"

Well, don't wake up one day when you are already hearing about a Sunday Law, and cry that cry. Because it may be too late.

Whenever temptation comes upon you unexpectedly, remove yourself, your eyes, your thoughts immediately from that temptation, and immediately shoot up that prayer of faith, "Dear heavenly Father, please take away these sinful thoughts" or whatever may be tempting you - that craving will miraculously and mysteriously disappear.

It is the mystery of godliness. You may have to pray a dozen times in one hour, but I promise you, a few days of this, and a few weeks of this, and a few months of this will have you a changed person, until the cravings are not so strong at all, eventually disappearing **completely**, and your nature has been changed.

Focus your reading habits on Jesus.

When your probation closes, you will not be saying, "I wish I got that fitted kitchen after all." Or "I wish I spent more time in the office", "I wish I worked harder and could have afforded to go on that cruise." The only wish any of us will have is that we had spent more time in prayer to God, pleading for His Holy Spirit, for His Latter Rain.

While some will be crying out, "The harvest is past, the summer is ended, and we are not saved", others will be hearing Jesus say, "Well done, thou good and faithful servant: enter thou into the joy of thy lord."

## Summary

The Latter Rain will not be given to anyone with one spot or blemish on their character; only to those that perfectly reflect the character of Christ.

We will receive the Latter Rain or we are lost. If we do not progress, if we do not place ourselves in an attitude to receive both the former and the **latter rain, we shall lose our souls**, and the responsibility will lie at our own door.

The Latter Rain, Loud Cry and Sealing begin before the Sunday Law. **Now** is the time that the Lord is sealing His people, and He is **now** choosing those that will receive the Latter Rain without measure at the Sunday Law, by sealing those that **now** have no spot or stain on their characters.

Don't be a foolish virgin who wakes up at the Sunday Law, when the Loud Cry goes forth with power, when it is too late for Christ to develop your character.

As one devout Christian testifies: "Morning worship is one of

the most important keys. Country living is essential in my view. These things made all the difference to me after my ten failed years of giving Christ 99%."

Also, realise that it will take a sacrifice. You will have to sacrifice that craving just a bit. You will have to go without.

Realise that the effort you already put into the whole 99%, will be equal to just that last tiny 1% remaining.

Even our sinful tendencies can be changed, so we no longer have the tendency to sin. Isn't that wonderful?

## **Regarding country living**

It is time to be making not only spiritual, but also very real, practical preparations for what is coming. If you are faithful, your career will ultimately become worthless. The Holy Spirit will call you to reach out to a perishing world with power and earnestness.

Unable to buy and sell, you will need a base that is secluded, where to can retreat and grow your own food. It is now time to learn basic skills such as our ancestors used.

Failure to prepare will, I believe, be the main reason why many city believers will be deported to camps that have already been set up in remote places around the world. The holocaust did not begin in 1939 when the war began, but many years before when plans were laid, the victims were identified and categorised, and preparations made. Today, while we sleep, the plans are laid, the victims are identified and categorised, and the preparations are virtually ready for the crisis.

Planning ahead can spare you and loved ones much sorrow. You will be glad you did.

## 42

# THE LOUD CRY

As the gospel period starts to close, **trouble will be coming on the earth**, and the nations will be angry, **yet held in check**, so as not to prevent the work of the Third Angel's Message, as it prepares the faithful to stand through the crisis ahead.

Meanwhile, all of God's true people will come into unity and help give the final warning message, a message so solemn and alarming that it will make "*all the inhabitants of the land tremble*".

Joel 2:1 - "*Blow ye the trumpet... **sound an alarm**:... let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the Lord cometh, for it is nigh at hand.*"

Compare with this prophecy in Revelation:

Revelation 18:1-4 - "*And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.*

*And he cried mightily with a **strong voice**, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.*

*For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.*

*And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, **Come out of her, my people**, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues."*

## **Impetus given to the warning message**

As God's messengers have true revival in their lives, **God will** turn around the very events that the Papacy is using for her agenda, and **use these events** (depicted in Joel and Daniel 11:45) as the very means to get all who are honest in heart to finally listen.

*Joel 3:9-10 - "Proclaim ye this among the Gentiles; Prepare war [marginal reading: "**sanctify war**"], **wake up the mighty men, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up: Beat your plowshares into swords and your pruninghooks into spears: let the weak say, I am strong.**"*

This is God's battle. Only those who realise their weakness and their great need of Jesus will stand through this. This is the Loud Cry message to the world. This is the Lord speaking and telling His people to **wake up and prepare for war.**

## **Opposite from what the churches are saying**

This is the opposite from what the churches and world are saying, as prophesied in Isaiah:

*Isaiah 2:2-4 - "And **many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.**"*

But God speaks against this false, soothing message of peace:

*Isaiah 2:5-6 - "O house of Jacob, come ye, and let us walk in the light of the LORD. Therefore **thou hast forsaken thy people the house of Jacob, because they be replenished from the east, and are soothsayers like the Philistines, and they please themselves in the children of strangers.**"*

**The test will come to every person.**

The last rays of merciful light, the last message of mercy to be given to the world, will be a revelation of God's character of love, seen in the lives of those who give the message. The obedient children of God will show in their lives His glory. In their own life and character they are to reveal what the grace of God has done for them.

The two armies will stand distinct and separate, and this distinction will be so marked that many who shall be convinced of the truth will come on the side of God's commandment-keeping people.

Many people and leaders from all countries of the world will refuse to worship the beast and embrace his false teachings. Instead, they will worship and obey Jesus only. They will then receive His holy Sabbath sign, or mark, in their foreheads (Revelation 7:2, 3), thus sealing them for eternity.

God's last-day movement will grow with amazing speed as millions join God's people and accept His offer of salvation by free grace and faith in Jesus, which transforms them into His obedient servants.

## 43

**AMERICA PUNISHED**

**When the Caliphate is formed** and the Caliph (the supreme leader) is installed, he will be believed to be the reincarnation of Muhammed, and he will declare global jihad. Fighting between **Islamic nations** will subside, and they **will unite** in a common cause - to take the world for Allah.

Their first plan is that Israel will be overrun, and the King of the North will establish his seat of government in Jerusalem.

**The Papacy**, knowing that Islam and Protestantism must be destroyed if she is going to rule the world, will then **pit Islam against the United States** and the great powers of the earth. (Remember, "every man's hand will be against him.")

Revelation 9:16 - And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

Although, in Chapter 27, we provide what I believe is a more correct translation of this verse, yet the following may be of interest.

Some Bible students point out that of 1.6 billion Muslims in the world today, 200 million of them are considered to be radical extremists. And they consider that this is the exact number of war horsemen depicted in the above verse (200,000 x 1,000 = 200,000,000 - that is, 200 million). (John Ankerberg and John Weldon, *Fast Facts on Islam*, pp.19-20)

**No conventional modes of warfare will stop them.** How do you stop an army of 200 million suicide bombers, especially when there are 1.6 billion Muslims and there is no way of knowing who is a radical and who isn't?

## **Why Rome wants Islam to initiate jihad**

We must always remember that the Papacy is the main perpetrator behind the events and calamities coming upon the world. As the Bible tells us:

*Revelation 18:24 - "And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of **ALL** that were slain upon the earth."*

You know what "**ALL**" means.

Today, during the close of human history, we see Islam once again becoming a major force in the world.

**QUESTION:** Why would the Papacy want Islam to take the world for Allah?

**ANSWER:** Here is the 5-point Papal strategy:

### ***1. TO CREATE A CRISIS AND GET HER MARK OF AUTHORITY IMPOSED UPON ALL***

First of all, the Papacy needs a catalyst to cause the world to honour her institution, through a Sunday law, to compel all to come under her dominion.

When the wayward churches and the world are forced to face the **global jihad** that is **about to be unleashed**, they will be overwhelmed with terror. **Desperate people will resort to desperate measures**, such as a Sunday law.

In America, it will be argued that all the **troubles coming upon the nation** are the result of America's departure from God..

**Church leaders will urge** that the favour of God can only be restored if everyone unites in strict observance of religious laws, such as Sunday observance. Government will be pressured to enforce **Sunday observance by law by everyone**. And those who refuse to fall in line will be seen as dangerous to the well-being of the nation.

## ***2. BRING DOWN AMERICA***

Although America is to effectively become Rome's "army", or enforcer, the Vatican feels no love for this Protestant nation.

***The United States must be punished*** simply because it is a Protestant nation and the Protestant Reformation rebelled against the errors of the Papacy. Many of the reformers and their congregations fled to America and raised up churches in protest to the errors of Rome.

The Papacy feels **no loyalty** to the ecumenical Protestants that are flirting with her, nor to her Islamic agents. She pretends to love those who work for her, lulling them into a false sense of security, until she herself comes on top.

## ***3. DESTROY ISLAM***

The Papacy knows that if they are going to come out on top in the end and rule the world, Islam has to be dealt with. ***The Papacy wants Islam punished*** for not handing over Jerusalem to them when they first captured the temple mount in the year 637. In 689 to 691, they built the Dome of the Rock there, thus completely renegeing on their deal with the Papacy to hand Jerusalem over to the pope.

Therefore, the Papacy instigates Islam to destroy the United States economically, thereby starting a war with the Islamic extremists to punish them. So the world turns on Rome's rebellious child Islam, and "***he shall come to his end.***" (Daniel

11:45) The Caliphate (the resurrected Ottoman empire), consisting of an Islamic union of nations, will be annihilated.

*Daniel 11:45 - "And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain; yet **he shall come to his end, and none shall help him.**"*

Very shrewd, wouldn't you say? In the end, Protestant America is destroyed economically, then America and her allies destroy Islam, and who comes out on top? The Papacy, or so they plan.

### **5. GET JERUSALEM**

The Papacy has wanted Jerusalem for centuries. How shrewd it would be for the Papacy to coerce Islam into perpetrating a global jihad, beginning with Israel, and causing untold death and destruction throughout the world, including much of spiritual Babylon itself, to achieve her goal. Then she uses the other potential contenders to destroy one another, and when it is all done, she emerges as supreme world ruler, with her seat of government in Jerusalem.

**QUESTION:** As I study the prophecies, it seems apparent that the real enemy is always the devil. Do you agree?

**ANSWER:** Absolutely! Satan is always the real enemy. Satan works through earth's leaders and nations to hurt God's people and thus bring heartache to Jesus and the Father. We so easily forget that Satan is the enemy. He is the one responsible for all evil. Let's blame him and be careful how we judge and condemn people or organizations who hurt God's people. They are sometimes uninformed or even totally unaware that they are harming anyone. But that is never true of Satan. He is always fully aware. He hurts God and His people intentionally.

## **The terror soon to come**

The Bible describes the terrible destruction that is coming upon the earth, but, thank God, it also gives the assurance that all who truly repent of their sins will be protected during this time.

*Joel 2:6 - "Before their face the people shall be much pained: all faces shall gather blackness."*

**Confusion and great terror** is soon to come upon human beings. It is to break upon the world as an overwhelming surprise.

Those who have step by step yielded to worldly demands and conformed to worldly customs will not find it a hard matter to yield to the powers that be, rather than subject themselves to derision, insult, threatened imprisonment, and death.

**The contest is between the commandments of God and the commandments of men.** In this time the gold will be separated from the dross in the church. True godliness will be clearly distinguished from the appearance and tinsel of it. Many a star that has been admired for its brilliancy will then go out in darkness.

While a counterfeit revival will be seen among the churches, yet there will be a genuine revival among the faithful.

The Bible says **the entire world will be "*lightened*"** with its glory (Revelation 18:1). Every person on earth will be reached (Mark 16:15) with God's end-time, three-point message of Revelation 14:6-14. This truth as it is in Jesus is going to threaten Satan's dominion.

## **The Loud Cry's effect infuriates the counterfeit movement**

As the fearless and powerful testimony of God's people and the truth concerning the Sabbath lightens the earth, it will infuriate the leaders of the counterfeit revival still further. They will become fully convinced that those who refuse to cooperate with their worldwide movement are disloyal, unpatriotic, anarchists and, finally, dangerous fanatics who are dooming the entire world by their refusal to cooperate in the counterfeit revival. They are the cause of all the world's woes. Therefore they must not be tolerated. But they will be unable to refute the Sabbath truth, and this will enrage them, and they'll go out to crush it.

*Revelation 13:16-17 - "And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:*

*And that **no man might buy or sell**, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name."*

Those who are loyal to God will see every earthly support cut off. Because they refuse to break God's law in obedience to earthly powers, they will be **forbidden to buy or sell**.

At this time, those within the false movement who have a close walk with Jesus will see clearly that the persecuted ones have the truth, and they will come out and endure the persecution with them.

They will be asking, "If I keep the Sabbath (Saturday) holy, who am I obeying? But if I keep Sunday holy, whom am I obeying?" The answer to that question will be clear. As Rome itself admits:

*"The church changed Sabbath to Sunday and **all the world bows down and worships upon that day in silent obedience to the mandates of the Catholic Church.**"*

*(Hartford Weekly Call, February 22, 1884)*

The end-time coalition of world governments and religions will finally lose all sympathy for God's people, who refuse to join the counterfeit revival or adopt its symbol (Sunday worship). They will feel that the wonderful miracles accompanying their revival prove its validity - miracles such as the sick being healed or notorious God-haters, immoral movie stars, drug lords, and well-known criminals being converted.

The coalition will insist that no one be permitted to wreck this worldwide revival which is drawing all religions. Everyone will be urged to lay aside personal feelings and "fanatical teachings" (the Sabbath, for example) and join with the rest of the world in its sincere revival for peace and brotherhood. Everything other than the revival will be considered minor.

The United States, as head of this international movement, will next influence the nations of the world to impose a universal death sentence upon all who refuse to worship the beast or his image.

Another name for this worldwide coalition is "*Babylon the Great*." This worldwide alliance will, in the name of Christ, substitute the policeman's power for the Holy Spirit's persuasion and will force worship.

The final points of contention will be worshiping and obeying the beast and receiving his mark - Sunday as a holy day - versus worshiping and obeying Christ and receiving His mark - His holy seventh-day Sabbath. (For details, see Chapters 29 and 33)

Many of all nations, and of all classes, high and low, rich and poor, black and white, will be cast into the most unjust and cruel bondage. The beloved of God pass weary days, bound in chains, shut in by prison bars, sentenced to be killed, some apparently left to die of starvation in dark and loathsome dungeons. No

human ear is open to hear their moans; no human hand is ready to lend them help.

Will the Lord forget His people in this trying hour? Did He forget faithful Noah when judgments were visited upon the antediluvian world? Did He forget Lot when the fire came down from heaven to consume the cities of the plain? Did He forget Joseph surrounded by idolaters in Egypt? Did He forget Elijah when the oath of Jezebel threatened him with the fate of the prophets of Baal? Did He forget Jeremiah in the dark and dismal pit of his prison-house? Did He forget the three worthies in the fiery furnace? or Daniel in the den of lions?

*Isaiah 49:14-16 - "Zion said, Jehovah hath forsaken me, and my Lord hath forgotten me. Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee. Behold, I have graven thee upon the palms of My hands."*

The Lord of hosts has said, *"He that toucheth you, toucheth the apple of His eye."* (Zechariah 2:8)

Though enemies may thrust them into prison, yet dungeon walls cannot cut off the communication between their souls and Christ. One who sees their every weakness, who is acquainted with every trial, is above all earthly powers; and angels will come to them in lonely cells, bringing light and peace from heaven. The prison will be as a palace; for the rich in faith dwell there, and the gloomy walls will be lighted up with heavenly light, as when Paul and Silas prayed and sung praises at midnight in the Philippian dungeon.

## Death decree

Then, as the **calamities increase**, a desperate population will impose **more desperate measures** - such as a **death decree**.

*Revelation 13:15 - "And he had power to... cause that as many as would not worship [obey] the image of the beast should be killed."*

When the issues become clear and people are forced either to worship on Sunday and break the Sabbath or be killed, those who then choose Sunday rather than Sabbath will be, in essence, worshipping the beast. They will have chosen to obey the word of a creature, a man, instead of the word of their Creator, Jesus Christ.



As the decree issued by the various rulers of Christendom against commandment-keepers shall withdraw the protection of government, and abandon them to those who desire their destruction, the people of God will flee from the cities and villages and associate together in companies, dwelling in the most desolate and solitary places.

Many will find refuge in the strongholds of the mountains. Like the Christians of the Dark Ages, they will make the high places of the earth their sanctuaries, and will thank God for the *“munitions of rocks.”* (Isaiah 33:16)

Many will become martyrs for Christ's sake in standing in defence of the truth. But remember, you will not be tested above what you are able to bear. Jesus bore this and far more.

In that day, those who kill God's people will feel they are doing God a favor. The Bible says:

John 16:2 - *“The time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.”*

They will think that by ridding the earth of these non-compliers, the evil will be stopped. However, instead of restoring peace, these draconian laws will result in **national ruin**.

But although total war and bloodshed is waiting to be unleashed, the angels of God still hold in check the *“four winds”* of destruction until the people of God are sealed in their foreheads.

## **When will the death decree be imposed?**

The death decree, at least in some areas of the earth, will be legislated, and even executed, before the close of probation (that is, before the day of mercy closes). Many of the faithful will be *“beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God”* because they *“had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands.”* (Revelation 20:4)

In other parts of earth, once the decree is issued, or made into law, there will be a certain time before it is to be executed.

This is in perfect harmony with the Bible account of a previous decree found in the book of Esther. On that occasion, Haman *"sought to destroy all the Jews that [were] throughout the whole kingdom of Ahasuerus, [even] the people of Mordecai. verse 6. let it be written that they may be destroyed:... Then were the king's scribes called on the **thirteenth day of the first month**, and there was written according to all that Haman had commanded. ...And the letters were sent by posts into all the king's provinces, to destroy, to kill, and to cause to perish, all Jews, both young and old, little children and women, in one day, [even] upon the **thirteenth [day] of the twelfth month.**"* (Esther 3:6,9,12,13)

Notice that the death decree was issued on the 13th day of the first month, but it was not to "go forth", or in other words, "to be executed" until a certain day, the 13th day of the twelfth month. So there was a period of 11 months from the time it was put into law until it was to be carried out.

We cannot put an exact time period on the coming death decree nor the "seven last plagues" that follow, but we can know that in many parts of the world the decree which will be issued just before the close of probation, will not be enforced until near the end of the plagues.

So it appears that a decree will be passed, and then, after a certain time, it will be executed. It makes sense that facing the death decree is the culmination of the final test between the Sabbath and the mark of the beast before God's people are sealed. The prophesied 144,000 who are faithful to Jesus will thereby demonstrate that they love God more than life itself just as the three Hebrews in ancient Babylon faced death, and then Daniel faced the lions den. Then the power of their witness goes viral across the planet.

This is the final demonstration to a lost and dying world that there are a people who love God supremely and will keep His

commandments even in the face of death. What good would it do after God's people are already sealed?

## God's response

God's judgments will be visited upon those who are seeking to oppress and destroy His people. His long forbearance with the wicked emboldens men in transgression, but their punishment is none the less certain and terrible because it is long delayed.

*Isaiah 28:21 - "The Lord shall rise up as in Mount Perazim, He shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that He may do His work, His strange work; and bring to pass His act, His strange act."*

To our merciful God the act of punishment is a strange act.

*Ezekiel 33:11 - "As I live, saith the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked."*

*Nahum 1:3 - "The Lord is "merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, ... forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin." Yet He will "by no means clear the guilty." "The Lord is slow to anger, and great in power, and will not at all acquit the wicked."*

By terrible things in right judgment He will vindicate the authority of His downtrodden law. The severity of the retribution awaiting the transgressor may be judged by the Lord's reluctance to execute justice. The nation with which He bears long, and which He will not smite until it has filled up the measure of its iniquity in God's account, will finally drink the cup of wrath unmixed with mercy.

# 44

## ISLAM AS A PROTECTOR

It is interesting to review the fact that the Muslims were given a command by God. They were to be His instruments, both for protection of God's people and for chastisement of those who had turned away from God.

### In the First Woe

Note upon whom the First Woe was to fall, and who was to be spared.

During the First Woe Islam emerged to attack the corrupt forces of Rome suddenly and destructively, but to spare some others.

And it was commanded them that they should *not hurt* the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither *any tree*; but only those men which have not the *seal of God* in their foreheads. (Revelation 9:4)

During the time of Muhammad and shortly thereafter were men who loved God and were following Him to the best of their knowledge. The command given to the "locust horses" was not to "hurt" them.

After the death of Mahomet [Muhammad], he was succeeded in the command by Abubeker, A. D. 632; who, as soon as he was

firmly in power, sent a circular letter to the Arabian tribes, of which the following is an extract. Notice almost the same wording used by Abubeker:

***"Destroy no palm trees, nor burn any field of corn. Cut down no fruit trees, nor do any mischief to cattle, only such as you kill to eat..."***

***"As you go on, you will find some religious persons, who live retired in monasteries, and propose to themselves to serve God that way: let them alone and neither kill them nor destroy their monasteries. And you will find another sort of people that belong to the synagogue of Satan, who have shaven crowns; be sure you cleave their skulls, and give them no quarter, till they either turn Mahometans or pay tribute'."*** (Edward Gibbon *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, Vol.V:489-490)

The Roman Catholic monks shaved their heads in a circle shape of the sun when they were ordained priests. This circular tonsure was a sign of the pagan sun god.

Islam from the beginning made a clear distinction between different groups of Christians, a fact that is confirmed by the *Koran*.

***"Not all of them are alike: Of the People of the Book [Christians] are a portion that stand (For the right): They rehearse the Signs of Allah all night long, and they prostrate themselves in adoration. They believe in Allah and the Last Day; they enjoin what is right, and forbid what is wrong; and they hasten (in emulation) in (all) good works: They are in the ranks of the righteous. "*** (Sura 3.113-114 Al-E-Imran)

The *Koran* clearly makes the testimony that not all professing Christians are true Christians. It gives an amazing insight about Christians, that only those who follow God's signs, forbidding

what is wrong and doing what is right, are classed among the “righteous”!

One major “sign” of God that the faithful portion would practise is that they would honour and keep His Holy Sabbath of rest on Saturday, according to God’s Law.

## **In the Second Woe**

Revelation 9:20-21 elaborates on how radical Islam was used to punish Rome and disobedient Christianity, but they still refused to turn from their evil ways.

But this Muslim attack on Rome and her agents also helped to save the true followers of the Bible from Rome's attacks.

It was during the same time frame of the Second Woe that the Reformation of the sixteenth century took place in Europe. Some of those within the corrupt church of Rome saw its errors and protested these errors. Chief among them was a devout Roman Catholic priest in Germany - the reformer Martin Luther.

Then Islam intervened in protecting those who sought to escape from the iron grip of the Roman Vatican. Historians abound with reports of how this occurred.

*“When a crisis arose in the affairs of the Reformation, and the kings obedient to the Roman See [the papal hierarchy] had united their swords to strike, and with blow so decisive that they should not need to strike a second time, the Turk, obeying One Whom he knew not, would straightway present himself on the eastern limits of Europe, and in so menacing an attitude, that the swords unsheathed against the poor Protestants had to be turned in another quarter. The Turk was **the lightning-rod that drew off the tempest**. Thus did Christ cover His little flock with the*

*shield of the Moslem.*" (J. A. Wylie, *History of Protestantism* Volume 1, p.474)

*"Traversing Hungary, the Ottoman host had sat down before the walls of Vienna a week before the Marburg Conference. The hills around that capital were white with their tents, and the fertile plains beneath its walls, which the hoof of Mussulman horse had never pressed till now, were trodden by their cavalry. The besiegers were opening trenches, were digging mines, were thundering with their cannon, and already a breach had been made in the walls.*

*"A few days and Vienna must succumb to the numbers, the impetuosity, and valor of the Ottoman warriors, and a desolate and blood-besprinkled heap would alone remain to mark where it had stood.*

*"The door of Germany burst open, the conquerors would pour along the valley of the Danube, and plant the crescent amid the sacked cities and devastated provinces of the Empire. The prospect was a terrible one. A common ruin, like avalanche on brow of Alp, hung suspended above all parties and ranks in Germany, and might at any moment sweep down upon them with resistless fury.*

*"It is you who have brought this Muslim scourge upon us,' cried the Pope's agents to the Protestants.*

*"Not so,' said Luther [the Protestant leader]. **'It is God who has unloosed this army,** whose king is Abaddon the destroyer. They have been sent to punish us for our sins, our ingratitude for the Gospel, our blasphemies, and above all, our shedding of the blood of the righteous.'"* (Ibid., Vol. 1, p.567)

You notice how Martin Luther understood that the prophecy of Revelation 9:11 applied to the Muslims.

The Vatican had passed a death decree against the Protestants

and the priests were stirring up the people to have the Protestants put to death.

But Soliman the Magnificent, setting out from Constantinople on the 23rd of April, 1526, at the head of a mighty army, and swollen at last to 300,000 Turks, came nearer and nearer to Hungary. The land now shook with terror.

*“The Turk became **the conducting-rod that drew off the lightning of the Vatican and helped to shield Europe**” (Ibid., Vol. 2, p.598) and “to save Protestantism in Hungary, though he was all unaware of the service which he performed.” (Ibid., Vol.3, p.221)*

*“It was **the Turk who suddenly stepped forward to save Protestantism in Hungary**, though he was all unaware of the service which he performed. Soliman the Magnificent, setting out from Constantinople on the 23rd of April, 1526, at the head of a mighty army, which, receiving accessions as it marched onward, was swollen at last to 300,000 Turks, was coming nearer and nearer Hungary, like the ‘wasting levin.’*

*“The land now shook with terror. King Louis was without money and without soldiers. The nobility were divided into factions; the priests thought only of pursuing the Protestants; and the common people, deprived of their laws and their liberty, were without spirit and without patriotism. Zapolya, the lord of seventy-two castles, and by far the most powerful grandee in the country, sat still, expecting if the king were overthrown to be called to mount the vacant throne.*

*“Meanwhile the terrible Turk was approaching, and demanding of Louis that he should pay him tribute, under the threat of planting the Crescent on all the churches of Hungary, and slaughtering him and his grandees like ‘fat oxen.’*

*“The edict of death passed against the Protestants still remained in force, and **the monks, in the face of the black tempest that was rising in the east, were stirring up the people to have the Lutherans put to death.***

*“...King Louis had set out to stop the advance of the powerful Soliman. On the 29th of August his little army of 27,000 met the multitudinous hordes of Turkey at Mohacz, on the Danube.*

*"Soliman's force was fifteen times greater than that of the king. Louis gave the command of his army to the Archbishop of Cologne—an ex- Franciscan monk more familiar with the sword than the chaplet, and who had won some glory in the art of war.*

*“When the king put on his armor on the morning of the battle, he was observed to be deadly pale. All foresaw the issue. ‘Here go twenty-seven thousand Hungarians,’ exclaimed Bishop Perenyi, as the host defiled past him....*

*"By evening the plain of Mohacz was covered with the Hungarian dead, piled up in gory heaps. Twenty-eight princes, five hundred nobles, seven bishops, and twenty thousand warriors lay cold in death. Escaping from the scene of carnage, the king and the papal legate sought safety in flight.*

*"Louis had to cross a black pool which lay in his course; his horse bore him through it, but in climbing the opposite bank the steed fell backward, crushing the monarch, and giving him burial in the marsh. **The papal nuncio, like the ancient seer from the mountains of Aram, was taken and slain.***

*"Having trampled down the king and his army, the Muslim army slaughtered 200,000 of its inhabitants. **This calamity, which thrilled all Europe, brought rest to the Protestants.**”*  
(*Ibid.*, Volume 3, p. 221)

*"In the 16th and 17th centuries support and encouragement for Protestants and Calvinists... were one of the fundamental principles of Ottoman policy." (Halil Inalcik, "The Heyday and Decline of the Ottoman Empire" in *History of Islam*, pp.325-329)*

*"There would have been no Protestantism had there been no Turk." (Kenneth Oster, *Islam Reconsidered*, p.72. Quoted by M. Maxwell in *God Cares II* pp.255-256)*

Thus we find that Islamic forces, in the form of the Ottoman Turks, were instruments in God's hands for the fulfilment of Bible prophecy. Constantinople (the capital of the Eastern Roman empire) fell into the hands of Muslims. The Eastern Roman empire collapsed. Today that same city is named Istanbul, Turkey.

## **The First Woe and Second Woe compared with the Third Woe**

In the **First Woe**, God used Islam to punish a power that had fallen away from true Christianity, while at the same time protecting those who lived according to God's commandments.

In the **Second Woe**, Islam (under the Turks) sheltered God's Bible-obedient people during the Protestant Reformation, while they were used to punish apostate Christianity (Rome). God used Islam to divert the destructive forces of persecution and enable the Reformation to go forward.

Looking ahead to the **Third Woe**, we can again expect history to be repeated.

As in the Second Woe, so in the coming Third Woe we can expect the hand of Rome's enforcer to be raised, ready to persecute dissenters who truly follow God, when suddenly and unexpectedly radical Islam strikes the Vatican's enforcer or "army", America. Then Rome's "army" is distracted while it

"restrains" radical Islam and the people of God are largely sheltered during the sealing time (Rev 7:1-4).

**The target** of the "locusts" (Islam) has always been a corrupted church system - those who are closely linked with the Roman Papacy. The work of the "locusts" in the third and final woe will likely be the same as in the first and second "woes."

Islamic forces will be instruments, both **for protection** of God's obedient people and **for chastisement** of those who had fallen away from the truth of God's Word while yet claiming to be His people.

In a nutshell, **Islam has a two-fold role** in Bible prophecy, to punish Rome and at the same time to shelter God's people.

### **To occur again soon**

To destroy the Vatican's enemies, the Vatican created Islam. But Islam has been a thorn in Rome's side, time after time.

History is in the hand of God – He knows it from its beginning to its end. God owns history. He knows every detail. God uses what Satan means for evil, and takes it and makes it useful to further His prophetic Word.

*Genesis 50:20 - "As for you, you meant evil against me, but God meant it for good in order to bring about this present result, to preserve many people alive."*

Do you remember reading in the book of Esther how Haman built gallows on which to hang his enemy Mordecai, but he ended up being hung on his own gallows?

In that, we see a spiritual law in operation, which is referred to in the Bible:

*Galatians 6:7 - "Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for*

*whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap."*

Psalm 57:6 - *"They spread a net for my feet - I was bowed down in distress. They dug a pit in my path - but they have fallen into it themselves."*

Proverbs 28:10 - *"Whoever leads the upright along an evil path will fall into their own trap, but the blameless will receive a good inheritance."*

And here is an interesting prophecy:

Isaiah 21:13-15 - "A prophecy concerning Arabia: You caravans of Dedanites, who camp in the thickets of Arabia, bring water for the thirsty; you who live in Tema, ***bring food for the fugitives. They flee from the sword***, from the drawn sword, from the bent bow and from the heat of battle."

**QUESTION:** Is this speaking about a time when God is calling on the Arabs (Muslims) to bring bread and water to those who are fleeing from the spiritual battles of the last days?

## **The "four winds" loosed**

The angering of the nations will eventually result in one deadly combat, when, *"his hand will be against every man, and every man's hand against him"* (Genesis 16:11). Radical Islam will stir up the nations, and the world will come together against Islam in a Third World War. This is when the "four winds" are no longer restrained, and finally the four winds are loosed.

Daniel 12:1 - *"At that time shall Michael stand up, the*

*great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book."*

This will mark the beginning of a very short window of time when Michael (Christ) ends His mediation on behalf of His people, leaves the Most Holy Place of the heavenly temple, then, according to the book of Revelation, lingers at the Golden Altar, ready to return to earth as King of kings and Lord of lords.

---

**Who is "Michael... the great prince"?**

1. He is also called "*the prince of the covenant*". (Daniel 11:22)
  2. He shall... *stand up*." "Stand up" means "*reign*". Compare Daniel 11:2,3,4,7,20,21 - all of which refer to a person rising to the throne to reign. According to Daniel 7:13-14, the person who is to finally receive the kingdom to reign is "the Son of man", Jesus Himself.
  3. He is also called, in Jude 9, the "*arch-angel*" (the one who is above all the angels). "Angel" means "messenger"; "arch" means "over", or "above". So, as "arch-angel", He is "arch-messenger" - "*the messenger of the covenant*" (Malachi 3:1), who "*shall confirm the covenant*" (Daniel 9:27), and who is also called "*Messiah the prince*". (Daniel 9:25) Jesus spoke of His own blood as being "*My blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins*". (Matthew 26:28) His is "the blood of the everlasting covenant". (Hebrews 13:20)
-

## 45 PROBATION CLOSES - WINDS BREAK OUT FULLY

An angel returning from the earth announces that his work is done. The final test has been brought upon the world, and all who have proved themselves loyal to the divine precepts **have received** *"the seal of the living God"*.

Then Jesus ceases His intercession in the sanctuary above, raises His hands, and with a loud voice says, *"It is done."* **The period of mercy now ends.**

Up to this moment, although the nations have been mustering their forces for war and bloodshed, the "four winds" have been held in check. But now they are loosed - and all the elements strife will be let loose. The whole world will be involved in ruin more terrible than that which came upon Jerusalem of old.

Only those with clean hands and pure hearts will stand in that trying time.

The Papacy created Islam to be her battle axe and now Islam will bring judgment on the Papacy and destruction to all the churches who corrupt themselves by idolatrous devotion to the service of the Papacy.

*Joel 1:15 - "Alas for the day! for the day of the LORD is at hand, and as a destruction from the Almighty shall it come."*

This verse tells us that this scourge, as Islam attempts to conquer the world, is a judgment from the Lord.

Joel 2:9 - *"They shall run to and fro in the city; they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up upon the houses; they shall enter in at the windows like a thief."*

The first part of this verse can be translated "they shall rush upon the city". this is one reason why we are told to **get out of the cities**. Very soon, the cities will be **destroyed and desolated**.

The "restraints" which have been imposed upon Islam, by which they were restricted to "tormenting", will be removed by God, and they will go forth to try to conquer the world for Allah.

In desperation, the U.S.-led coalition will next decide to impose the death sentence on its enemies (Revelation 13:15).

**QUESTION:** What does Revelation 13:13, 14 say its leaders will do to convince people that God is with them?

**ANSWER:** They will work miracles so convincing that everyone except God's faithful end-time people will be persuaded (Matthew 24:24).

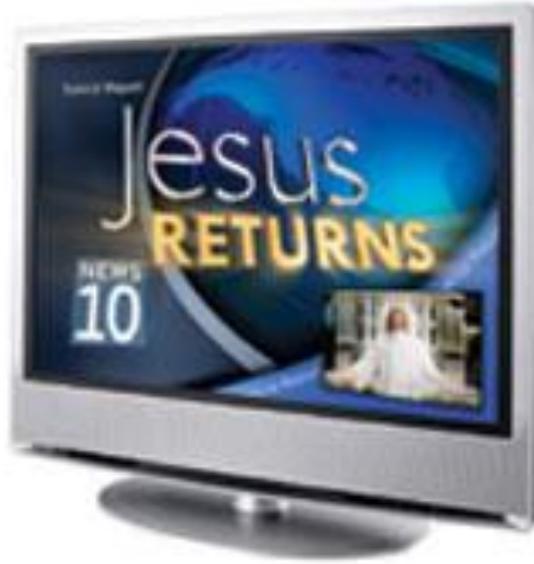
Utilizing the spirits (or fallen angels) of Satan (Revelation 16:13, 14), they will impersonate dead loved ones of the people through sorcery (Revelation 18:23) and probably even pose as Bible prophets and apostles.

These lying (John 8:44), demonic spirits will doubtless claim that God has sent them to urge all to cooperate.

### **Satan's angels pose as Christian ministers**

Satan's angels will also appear as godly clergymen, and Satan will appear as an angel of light (2 Corinthians 11:13-15).

## Satan appears as Jesus Christ



As the crowning act in the great drama of deception, Satan himself will personate Christ. The church has long professed to look to the Saviour's advent as the consummation of her hopes. Now the great deceiver will make it appear that Christ has come. In different parts of the earth, Satan will manifest himself among men as a majestic being of dazzling brightness, resembling the description of the Son of God given by John in the Revelation.

Billions, believing that Satan is Jesus, will bow at his feet and join the counterfeit movement. The deception will be overwhelmingly effective.

While he lifts up his hands, and pronounces a blessing upon them, as Christ blessed His disciples when He was upon the earth, his voice is soft and subdued, yet full of melody. In gentle, compassionate tones he presents some of the same gracious, heavenly truths which the Saviour uttered; he heals the diseases of the people, and then, in his assumed character of Christ, he claims to have changed the Sabbath to Sunday, and commands all to hallow the day which he has blessed.

He declares that those who persist in keeping holy the seventh day are blaspheming his name by refusing to listen to his angels sent to them with light and truth. He will declare that the little companies standing in defiance of the Sunday law are the cause of the disasters that are occurring, and therefore ought not to be tolerated.

But the people of God will not be misled. The teachings of this false christ are not in accordance with the Scriptures. His blessing is pronounced upon the worshipers of the beast and his image, the very class upon whom the Bible declares that God's unmingled wrath shall be poured out.

And, furthermore, Satan is not permitted to counterfeit the manner of Christ's advent. The Saviour has warned His people against deception upon this point, and has clearly foretold the manner of His second coming.

*Matthew 24:23-27 - "There shall arise false christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.... Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, He is in the desert; go not forth: behold, He is in the secret chambers; believe it not. **For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.**"*

This coming, there is no possibility of counterfeiting. It will be universally known - witnessed by the whole world.

The Bible says that when Jesus returns, *every eye will see Him* (Revelation 1:7) and *He will not touch the earth* but will remain in the cloud and call His people to meet Him in the air (1 Thessalonians 4:16, 17).

## **How can we be safe from powerful end-time deceptions?**

1. God's end-time people will not be deceived, because they *test every teaching by the Bible* (2 Timothy 2:15; Acts 17:11; Isaiah 8:19, 20). The Bible says God's law cannot be changed (Matthew 5:18)

2. *Follow truth as Jesus reveals it.* Jesus promises that those who do His will never end up in error (John 7:17).

3. *Stay close to Jesus daily* (John 15:5).

Only those who have been diligent students of the Scriptures, and who have received the love of the truth, will be shielded from the powerful delusion that takes the world captive. By the Bible testimony these will detect the deceiver in his disguise. To all, the testing time will come. By the sifting of temptation, the genuine Christian will be revealed.

Are the people of God now so firmly established upon His word that they would not yield to the evidence of their senses? Would they, in such a crisis, cling to the Bible, and the Bible only?

Satan will, if possible, prevent them from obtaining a preparation to stand in that day. He will so arrange affairs as to hedge up their way, entangle them with earthly treasures, cause them to carry a heavy, wearisome burden, that their hearts may be overcharged with the cares of this life, and the day of trial may come upon them as a thief.

## 46

# SEVEN LAST PLAGUES

In ancient times, God's people the Israelites were slaves in Egypt. God wanted to take them out but Pharaoh hardened his heart. When Egypt's pharaoh refused to let God's people go and instead took away their right to a Sabbath rest, God struck Egypt with plagues (Exodus 5). These events symbolize what will happen in the final days. The circumstances will be similar, and the application will be worldwide.

In Revelation, John describes the seven last plagues that will fall at the end of the world's time of mercy. This close of probation, just like in Egypt, will come after the Mark of the Beast is enforced, depriving God's people of their freedom to worship Him according to the dictates of their conscience. In the end times, the Sabbath will once again be the issue.

*Revelation 15:1 - "I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God."*

The seven last plagues are the most terrible displays of God's justice and some may even wonder if this outpouring of punishment is contrary to the nature of a God of love. But God has intended for these things to be soberly considered and He's devoted a whole chapter in the book of Revelation for this very purpose.

There are two classes. Class 1 worships the Creator - Their loyalty to Jesus is demonstrated by keeping His commandments, including the Bible Sabbath. Class 2 worships the beast - They turn their backs on the Creator, accept the traditions of man, disobey God, receive the Mark of the Beast—the sign of rebellion against God

This planet has been in rebellion from the first bite of the forbidden fruit and all the years between Eden and the flood, when God's wrath was poured out in the worldwide flood. God has had His champions of truth who would not bow their knees to an image, just as in the last days there will be a remnant people who will not bow to the Image of the Beast.

### ***PROTECTION FOR THE FAITHFUL***

The whole world will soon enter the final crisis, and God's obedient people will be able to say as David wrote in Psalm 23:4, *“Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.”*

Isaiah 33:15-17 - *“He that walketh righteously, and speaketh uprightly; he that despiseth the gain of oppressions, that shaketh his hands from holding of bribes, that stoppeth his ears from hearing of blood, and shutteth his eyes from seeing evil; He shall dwell on high: his place of defence shall be the munitions of rocks: **bread shall be given him; his waters shall be sure.** Thine eyes shall see the king in his beauty: they shall behold the land that is very far off.”*

Psalm 37:19 - *“They shall not be ashamed in the evil time: and in the days of famine they shall be satisfied.”*

God promises to provide what we need during the plagues.

Psalm 91:5-11 - *“Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noon-day. A thousand shall fall at thy side and ten thousand at thy right hand, but it shall not come nigh thee. Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see*

*the reward of the wicked. Because thou hast made the Lord, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways."*

Christ is talking to His people. He's saying, "You will go through a time of difficulty. There will be calamity all around you but hold on to your garments, watch after your character because I'm coming! Keep your faith."

### ***SEVEN PLAGUES OF TRIBULATION***

WE noted in Chapter 21 that the 7-year tribulation theory being preached by many Protestants is not found in the Bible. Of the 21 times "tribulation" is mentioned in the New Testament, never is it spoken of as a seven year period. The tribulation is not in 7 years, but in 7 last plagues. These plagues are fruit of peoples' rejection of God's loving message of warning.

*Proverbs 1:24-31 - "Because I have called, and ye refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded; But ye have set at nought all my counsel, and would none of my reproof: I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your fear cometh; When your fear cometh as desolation, and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind; when distress and anguish cometh upon you. Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me: For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD: They would none of my counsel: they despised all my reproof. Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices."*

*Revelation 15:1- "And I saw another sign in heaven... seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is*

*filled up the wrath of God.”*

The seven last plagues are called "the wrath of God." The seven last plagues will be literal and yet each will strike a telling blow at some aspect of apostate religion and thus have symbolic overtones.

Revelation 16:1 - *“And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.”*

### ***THE FIRST PLAGUE***

Revelation 16:2 - *“And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell **a noisome and grievous sore** upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.”*

These oozing sores will cover the body and be both “painful and severe,” unable to be treated with medication or by supposed faith healers.

This first installment of “the wrath of God” falls upon those who have failed to heed either the Third Angel’s message, which warned them against worshipping “the beast and his image” (Revelation 14:9), or God’s final call to come out of mystic Babylon (Revelation 18:1-4).

Isaiah 1:4-6 - *“Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters: they have forsaken the LORD, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel unto anger, they are gone away backward. Why should ye be stricken any more? ye will revolt more and more: the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint. From the sole of the foot even unto the head there is no soundness in it; but wounds, and bruises, and*

*putrifying sores: they have not been closed, neither bound up, neither mollified with ointment."*

In God's eyes, their lives are like oozing sores, so now they are struck with a literal plague of sores.

## ***THE SECOND PLAGUE***

Revelation 16:3 - "*And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea, and **the sea became as the blood of a dead man**: and every living soul died in the sea."*

The sea is useful primarily as a highway for international commerce and travel. It has been suggested that by the obstruction of international travel and trade, this plague is designed to demonstrate in a signal way of God's displeasure with respect to Satan's plan to bind the nations of the world together under his control.

"... *blood of a dead man* ..." Nothing more offensive can be imagined than the coagulated blood of a dead man. This plague kills all marine life. The stench will be unbearable.

## ***THE THIRD PLAGUE***

Revelation 16:4 - "*And the third angel poured out his vial upon **the rivers and fountains of waters**; and they **became blood**."*

Whereas the second plague would cause great inconvenience, the third plague will have a more immediate and serious effect; as the fresh water supplies are used for drinking, bathing and irrigation.

Now we read the significance of this plague in the next three verses.

Revelation 16:5, 6 - *“And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus. For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.”*

Can you imagine when a person turns on the faucet for a drink, or even is in the shower, when suddenly blood is coming out?

Revelation 16:7 - *“And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments.”*

### ***THE FOURTH PLAGUE***

Revelation 16:8, 9 - *“And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon **the sun**; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And men were **scorched with great heat**, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.”*

The ancient Egyptians called the sun-god, Ra, and they worshipped him. The Babylonians called the sungod, Bel-Marduk, and they worshipped him. Medo-Persia, Greece, and Pagan Rome worshipped the sun-god as well. What about the Christians? When Christianity and paganism fused in the early centuries, paganism and Christianity amalgamated or became one in Sun-day worship.

They have forced people to worship on the day of the sun, so now the sun scorches and burns them, causing the worst drought and famine the world has ever known.

The literal plague is accompanied by a famine for God’s Word.

Amos 8:11, 12 - *“Behold, the days come, saith the Lord GOD, that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of the LORD: And they shall wander from sea to sea, and from the north even to the east, they shall run to and fro to seek the word of the LORD, and shall not find it.”*

The people are not searching to get closer to God, just for relief from the plagues. Satan convinces them that it is the Sabbath-keepers who have brought these plagues upon the world. Instead of acknowledging their guilt, they proceed to lay the blame for their miserable plight upon those who have remained true and loyal to God.

The first four plagues cause much disease, famine and drought. They appear to happen in rapid succession as under the 5th plague, they still suffer the sores of the first plague.

### ***THE FIFTH PLAGUE***

Revelation 16:10, 11 - *“And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon **the seat of the beast**; and his kingdom was full of **darkness**; and they gnawed their tongues for pain, And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.”*

The seat of the beast is, of course, Rome, and the beast, of course, is the Papacy, not so much in its religious aspect as in its assumed role of a world power dominant over other world powers. (Revelation 13:1, 2, 10; 17:3, 8, 9, 11)

The beast has held the world in spiritual darkness through the traditions that replaced God’s laws and truth. Now comes a deep, cold literal darkness over the seat of the beast, with its attendant cold and misery, for the long period in which people have been diverted from the truth of the scriptures.

Psalm 119:105 - *“Thy word is a lamp unto my feet and a light unto my path.”*

Though men grope unrepentantly for light in a spiritually dark world, God sends them literal darkness.

The absence of light and heat would be all the more impressive and painful after the intense heat experienced under the fourth plague. Men confirm their perverse hatred of God as they continue to blaspheme as they did under the fourth plague. They do so because of their misery they suffer without relief and the pain from the sores of the first plague which apparently are not fatal.

### ***THE SIXTH PLAGUE***

Revelation 16:12-16 - *“And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river **Euphrates**; and the water thereof was **dried up**, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared. And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to **gather them to the battle** of that great day of God Almighty. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue **Armageddon**.”*

The battle of Armageddon begins as essentially a political conflict and comes to a climax with the appearance of Christ and the armies of heaven.

Here are twelve facts about this plague that are worth noting:

1. It is the last great battle of earth's history and is future.
2. It is “the battle of that great day of God.”

3. The great river Euphrates is symbolic of human beings.
  4. The three unclean spirits (verse 13) represent spiritualism or paganism (the mouth of the dragon); the Papacy (the mouth of the beast); and apostate Protestantism (the mouth of the false prophet).
  5. That these three “spirits” constitute the agencies that will summon the nations to battle.
  6. The three unclean spirits are religious in nature and the forces gathered are political and military.
  7. Preparations for the battle take place under the sixth plague and the actual battle itself is fought under the seventh plague.
  8. In one phase, the battle will be a real battle between real people, employing real weapons.
  9. There will be bloodshed on an unprecedented scale.
  10. All the nations of earth will be involved.
  11. Christ and the armies of heaven eventually intervene and bring the battle to a close.
  12. The living saints witness the battle, but not as participants.
- Revelation 14 *“For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles...”* Demonic spirits performing miracles as they are working in and through those persons under their control.

### ***THE SEVENTH PLAGUE***

Revelation 16:17 - *“And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, **It is done.**”*

Only two other times has this been uttered:

At creation, God said, **“It is finished.”** (Genesis 2:1)  
 And on the cross just before Jesus died, He said, **“It is finished.”** (John 19:30)

Revelation 16:18 - *“And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, ...”*

The great earthquake is felt on every continent of the earth. The Richter scale has no means to measure its ferocity. Cities and mountains will be leveled and islands shall disappear.

*Revelation 16:18-21 - "...a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great. And the great city was divided into three parts, and **the cities of the nations fell**: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath. And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found. And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the **plague of the hail**; for the plague thereof was exceeding great."*

*Job 38:22, 23 - "Hast thou entered into the treasures of the snow? or hast thou seen the treasures of the hail, Which I have reserved against the time of trouble, against the day of battle and war?"*

As the great hail falls, each stone weighing from 55 to 70 pounds, some even estimate a talent can be as much as 130 pounds, death and destruction are everywhere and for the third time the God of heaven is blasphemed as their utter contempt for Him is revealed.

The angel pouring the seventh vial into the air indicates that the plague will affect the whole earth. The voice from the temple is an official proclamation from the sovereign God of the universe.

As the wicked rush to annihilate the saints of God, they hear His voice saying "It is done," which **ends the time of trouble for God's people** (referred to in the Bible as the time of "Jacob's trouble"), delivers the saints and ushers in the wrath of the seventh plague.

Revelation 16:19 - *“And the great city was divided into three parts ...”*

Mystical Babylon of the last days is composed of **the Papacy, apostate Protestantism and modern spiritism**. At the voice of God this three fold union of apostate religious organizations **loses its cohesion, unity and power to act**. The components of this ungodly trio now turn upon themselves and there is strife and bloodshed everywhere.

## 47

# ARMAGEDDON - AND ISLAM DESTROYED

The **four winds** mentioned earlier in connection with Islam are also synonymous with the four corners of the earth, denoting "**worldwide**" (Matt 24:31, Mark 13:27, Ezekiel 37:9, Dan 8:8, 11:4, Zech 2:6). Specifically, the four winds represent global war as well as natural disasters that commence at the close of probation.

The King of the North will be destroyed at the beginning of the sixth plague. Compare these two passages opposite in meaning:

Revelation 16:12 - *"And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the **water thereof was dried up**, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared."* **Dried up.**

Revelation 9:14 - *"Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, **Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.**"* **Loosed.**

To understand the drying up of the great river Euphrates we must again allow the Bible to interpret itself: Concerning the ancient Assyrian power similar language is used:

Isaiah 8:7 - *"Now therefore, behold, the Lord bringeth up upon them **the waters of the river, strong and many, even the king of Assyria**, and all his glory: and he shall come over all his channels, and go over all his banks."*

According to this verse, the waters of a river represent a mighty army.

Revelation 9:14-15 - *"Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, **Loose the four angels which are bound in the***

*great river Euphrates. And the four angels **were loosed**, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the third part of men. And the number of **the army...**"*

When Josiah Litch published his expose on these verses and his prediction was fulfilled to the very day, his understanding of prophecy was **proven to be correct beyond dispute.**

In his explanation of these verses, he said that the loosing of the four angels that were bound in the great river Euphrates was the **loosing** of the Ottoman power.

So if the loosing of the four angels from the river Euphrates was **the loosing of the Ottoman or Muslim power**, then the drying up of the great river Euphrates would have to be **the drying up of that same power.**

*Daniel 11:45 - "And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain; yet **he shall come to his end, and none shall help him.**"*

Papal leaders know that if they are going to come out on top in the end and rule the world, Islam has to be dealt with. ***The Papacy wants Islam punished*** for not handing over Jerusalem to them when they first captured the temple mount in the year 637. In 689 to 691, they built the Dome of the Rock there, thus completely reneging on their deal with the Papacy to hand Jerusalem over to the pope.

***The United States must be punished*** simply because it is a Protestant nation and the Protestant Reformation rebelled against the errors of the Papacy. Many of the reformers and their congregations fled to America and raised up churches in protest to the errors of Rome.

Therefore, the Papacy instigates Islam to destroy the United States economically, thereby starting a war with the Islamic

extremists to punish them. Very shrewd, wouldn't you say? In the end, Protestant America is destroyed economically, then the American-led West destroys Islam, and who comes out on top? The Papacy, or so they plan.

So the world turns on Rome's rebellious child Islam, and "**he shall come to his end.**" (Daniel 11:45) The Caliphate (the resurrected Ottoman empire), consisting of an Islamic union of nations, will be annihilated. By comparing Revelation 16:12 with Revelation 9:14 (as seen at the beginning of this chapter), we know that he "*shall come to his end*" during the sixth plague.

Joel 2:20 - "**I will remove far off from you the northern army** [King of the North], and will drive him into a land barren and desolate, with his face toward the east sea [Dead Sea], and his hinder part toward the utmost sea [Mediterranean Sea], and his stink shall come up, and his ill savour shall come up, because he hath done great things."

"Driven into a land barren and desolate" is a symbol of speedy and total destruction.

Revelation 16:12-17 - "*And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of **the kings of the east** might be prepared.*

*And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.*

*For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto **the kings of the earth** and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.*

*Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.*

*And he **gathered them together** into a place called in the Hebrew tongue **Armageddon**.*

*And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, **It is done.**"*

## **The kings of the east - and Armageddon**

When the Islamic power is finally destroyed, **there will be a vacuum in the Middle East**. The Western nations will be desperate to gain control over the area that had been controlled by the Islamic nations. The reason for this is primarily **oil**. It could very well be this that will precipitate the battle of Armageddon.

*Joel 3:11-12 - "Assemble yourselves, and come, all ye heathen, and gather yourselves together round about: thither cause thy mighty ones to come down, O LORD. Let the heathen be wakened, and come up to the valley of **Jehoshaphat**: for there will I sit to judge all the heathen round about."*

***The kings of the east**, the nationalities, powers and kingdoms lying east of today's Israel, will act a conspicuous role in the matter.*

Will these predicted "***kings of the east***" whose armies shall converge on Israel for the Battle of Armageddon (Revelation 16:12) be Arab nations?

We have already seen that the Arabs (mostly Muslims) are said to live in ***the country of the east***." (Genesis 25:6-9)

They are called "***the children of the east***" (Genesis 29:1; Judges 6:3,5,33; 7:12; 8:10; 1 Kings 4:30)

They are also called "*the people of the east*" (Job 1:3) and "*the men of the east*" (Jeremiah 49:28; Ezekiel 25:4,10)

It seems likely that the millions of Muslims of Iran, Afghanistan, Turkistan and India will rush to the field of conquest in behalf of their religion.

The world's nations are eager for conflict, but they are held in check by the angels of God until the time shall come for the great battle of Armageddon.

# 48

## ROME DESTROYED AT JESUS' RETURN

Joel 3:14 - *"Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision: for the day of the LORD is near in the valley of decision."*

This verse is self explanatory. It is time to make our decision for the Lord.

We, by understanding the order of the closing events, can by faith follow our intercessor, Jesus Himself, as He ministers in the heavenly sanctuary on our behalf.

Jesus is preparing a people to stand in the sight of a holy God when His intercessory work shall cease. At that time we shall be without an intercessor because we shall be **sealed to survive** through the last great time of trouble without dying - to be gathered to Him at His Second Coming.

On the other side, there will be a global bond of union, one great **confederacy** of Satan's forces. *"And [they] shall give their power and strength unto the beast."* (Revelation 17:13)

This support of the beast by the image (likeness) of the beast will continue through the seven last plagues over a kingdom of men upon whom God has pronounced the sentence of eternal death.

Then, as disasters continue to fall upon them, millions of church people will eventually wake up to the fact that they have been deliberately misled by their preachers and leaders. "We are lost," they cry, "and you are the cause of our ruin." And they will turn upon the false shepherds. The very flock who once admired

them most will pronounce the most dreadful curses upon them. The very hands that once crowned them with laurels will be raised for their destruction.

As for the Papacy, it will, through all this, present itself as the saviour of mankind, and come on top with Jerusalem as her capital.

The Papacy will come out on top for a very short time. At the very moment when the Papacy thinks she has succeeded, her plans ultimately backfire.

Just as the Papacy is ready to take the throne of the world, she will be destroyed as all nations turn on her and "burn her with fire" (Revelation 17:16), and then the bloodbath is finally ended by the Second Coming of Jesus Christ. (2 Thessalonians 2:8)

The interval of the Papacy's triumph will last only from the sixth plague to the end of the seventh plague.

*Joel 3:13 - "Put ye in the sickle, for the harvest is ripe: come, get you down; for the press is full, the vats overflow; for their wickedness is great."*

This is describing the harvest of the grapes of wrath, the same as in Revelation 14:19-20. The harvest is overflowing, showing that the vast majority will be lost - by their own choice.

So it is that the King of the North (the Islam Caliphate) will come to his end at the beginning of the sixth plague. The Papacy will be destroyed at the end of the seventh plague. Both will be destroyed, one after the other, the controversy will be ended, and then Jesus will give to His faithful followers their eternal inheritance.

## 49

# WHAT JESUS IS PREPARING FOR YOU

Your Maker has *something very wonderful* planned: a place for you in a new world, *restored to a perfection* which shall surpass anything we have known. **No unclean thing shall enter. There will be *nothing to fear*.**

This is *not* some *vague* hope. The promises are SPECIFIC. ***What would you like most of all?*** Your Eternal Father has something even better in store for you. It will not be boring. ***Nobody can out-dream God!***

### **Better in every way**

Whatever good and wonderful things this earth can offer now, the new one will still be better. All will be transformed – the environment... human nature... everything!

### **No more death, loneliness or pain**

That's right... It means no loneliness, no more death... no more heartache, no more pain, no HIV, no drugs, no cancer, no more hospitals, no more medical insurance. And there'll be no mortgage payments.

**QUESTION: How is it possible that all these evils will be gone?**

**ANSWER: Those allowed into the *new earth* are those only who have chosen to accept God's power to become *new***

*persons*. Sick and tired of sin, they will be cured of it - so no unclean thing will enter. So all the causes of pain, sadness and death will be gone.

That's WHY God has the *character renewal programme going on now*. You have a chance NOW to be part of it. **Can you think of anything more valuable... more important** than this?

Yes, it is guaranteed! In the coming new earth you will never feel sick, or tired, and never feel lonely. And no more fear of losing loved ones.

There will be pleasant and invigorating things to do. We shall plant ...and build ...and even interact with other worlds. There will be endless wonders and mysteries to explore. You will enjoy the best life you can ever imagine, with unlimited possibilities.

Yes, the new earth means joy, love, adventure, discovery, beauty, gladness ...and we shall study through all eternity HIS awesome rescue plan...yet never fully understand what He did. ...And we shall **love HIM forever**.

DON'T LET ANYONE CHEAT YOU OUT OF THIS.

QUESTION: **Why destroy anyone?** Why not allow all of us into the new earth?

ANSWER: Okay, a man is let in... but there are no facilities for the drugs, gambling, or self-glory he craves. Instead, all around, he finds people joyful in their love for God. So...? This unchanged man would be a square peg in a round hole. To live endlessly in such a purified world, surrounded by what he hates and missing what he craves, would be sheer torture for him.

God's judgment is wise and merciful. For that man's own sake and **for the safety of the universe**, that man will cease to exist.



But God has a programme to restore people -and the great change is undeniable. With the *power* provided, **slaves** of the vilest habits are known to give them up, and their *whole pattern of living is new*.

### ***HE'LL RESPECT YOUR CHOICE***

As the result of public pressure, a state governor offered pardon to a man on death row. But the prisoner rejected the governor's pardon – so his execution went ahead.

**You are free** to push aside the rescue offer **AND** reject eternal life, **OR** you can begin enjoying *life at its best now* **PLUS** have eternal life reserved for you... Fair enough?

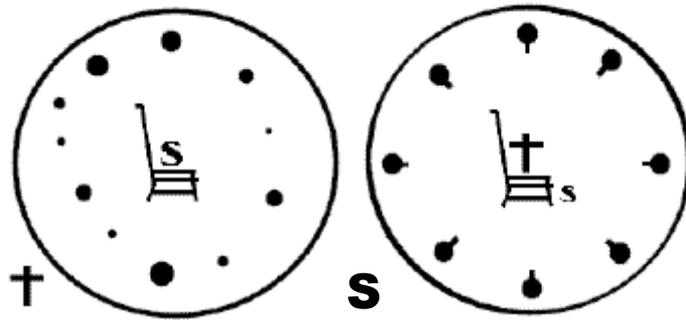
It's like a million dollar cheque that is made out to your name, but provides *no benefit until you endorse it*. But if you don't accept it, he won't force you. In his love for you, *he will honour your choice*.

Over 6,000 years of record exists of God's dealings with man. There is no logical reason why we cannot place our faith in him. Losing everything to gain him is the greatest gain of all. On that Judgment Day, Jesus Christ the Rescuer will be worth more than ten thousand worlds.

This life is yours. *No* second chance. When you die, *it's over*.

### It boils down to this:

These two circles represent two kinds of lives:



Self-Directed Life

Christ-Directed Life

**S**

**+**

\* Self is on the throne.

\* Jesus Christ is outside the life.

\* Interests are directed by self, often resulting in discord and frustration.

\* Jesus Christ is in the life and on the throne.

\* Self is yielding to Jesus, resulting in harmony with God's plan.

\* Interests are directed by Jesus, resulting in harmony with God's plan.

Which circle best represents your life? Which circle would you like to have represent your life?

## His wonderful invitation

Can you hear him calling?

- \* **“I love you** more than you can imagine, and
- \* I want **a relationship with you**. Will change your life.
- \* I will do for you **what no one else can** – forgive all your wrongs, provide all your needs and **pour out rich joys**.
- \* **You’ll never regret** the day you opened the door and invited me in,
- \* because I will give you **the abundant life for which you’ve always longed**.
- \* And remember, our relationship will **never end**,
- \* because we’ll have all eternity together.”

## Here's what to do

**1. Admit your need.** You and I have violated God's law, over and over. Only his mercy can save us.

**2. Tell him you're sorry for your wrongs.** And that you are ready to turn from them.

**3. Ask him to forgive you. Be specific.** He will forgive you immediately and wipe your past clean.

**4. Commit your life to him.** Simply speak to God, verbally or silently, and ask him to take over. You need to give the controls to him completely.

We need to be saved not just from sin, but also from our sinful nature. We need an entirely different make-up: a regeneration and renewal that God alone can accomplish.

**5. Feed your mind on positive books, tapes and DVDs– and especially that wonderful treasure, the Bible.**

(While **free** copies last, contact the address on the back cover. And ask for the **free**, no obligation, Bible correspondence course.)

**6. Associate with people who love Jesus, live by his laws, and are supportive.** You want change for the better?.

**7. Share the good news of His love.** Help others to benefit from this. They need him too. **From now on, this is your most important purpose in being alive.**



# 50

## GET READY

Religion is one thing - mostly invented by men.

But a personal inter-active relationship with God is something quite different. It is knowing a PERSON - one to whom you can talk as a friend and who also speaks back specifically on the point you have requested - who hears your prayers and answers them as only a Friend could, and so often in a miraculous way.

Only one who has experienced this can know how powerful it is! As they say, the proof of the pudding is in the eating. Millions, including myself, can testify to this top quality of life experience. There is nothing else like it. You need to experience it. You're not alive until you do.

*Jeremiah 29:11-13 - "For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end. Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart."*

*James 4:7-10 - "Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up."*

# 51

## PROMISES FOR THE TIME OF TROUBLE

If the message of this book has touched your heart and the Holy Spirit is speaking to you, be assured that your heavenly Father loves you very much. If you stand for Him, He will stand for you.

Please take these Bible promises to heart, assured that God means every word He says:

### ***WHEN YOU ARE PERSECUTED FOR FOLLOWING JESUS, HE WILL BE WITH YOU***

Isaiah 66:5 - "*Hear the word of the LORD, ye that tremble at his word; Your brethren that hated you, **that cast you out for my name's sake**, said, Let the LORD be glorified: but he shall appear to **your joy**, and they shall be ashamed.*"

Matthew 10:16-22,28-40 - "*Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.*

<sup>17</sup> *But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;*

<sup>18</sup> *And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.*

<sup>19</sup> *But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for **it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.***

*20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.*

*21 And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.*

*22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but **he that endureth to the end shall be saved.***

*28 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.*

*29 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.*

*30 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.*

*31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.*

*32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.*

*33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.*

*34 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.*

*35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.*

*36 And a man's foes shall be they of his own household.*

*37 He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.*

*38 And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.*

*39 He that findeth his life shall lose it: and **he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.***

*40 He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me."*

Matthew 16:24-26 - *"If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.*

*25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.*

*26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?"*

Matthew 19:29 - *"And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life."*

### ***HE WILL NOT LET YOU SUFFER MORE THAN YOU CAN BEAR***

1 Corinthians 10:13 - *"There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but **God is faithful**, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it."*

### ***TROUBLES ARE FOR A SHORT TIME: ETERNAL GLORY WILL FOLLOW***

1 Corinthians 4:17-18 - *"For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us **a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory**; While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal."*

1 Peter 4:12-13 - *"Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, **when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy"***

***NOTHING CAN SEPARATE  
YOU FROM GOD'S LOVE***

Romans 8:35,38--39 - *"Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord."*

***IN THE COMING TRIBULATION  
HE WILL SUPPLY YOUR NEEDS***

Psalm 34:7 - *"The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them."*

Philippians 4:19 - *"My God shall supply **all your need** according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus."*

Psalm 84:11 - *"The LORD God is a sun and shield: the LORD will give grace and glory: no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly."*

Isaiah 33:15-16- *"He that walketh righteously, and speaketh uprightly; he that despiseth the gain of oppressions, that shaketh his hands from holding of bribes, that stoppeth his ears from hearing of blood, and shutteth his eyes from seeing evil; He shall dwell on high: his place of defence shall be the munitions of rocks: **bread shall be given him; his waters shall be sure."***

Isaiah 41:17-18 - " *When the poor and needy seek water, and there is none, and their tongue faileth for thirst, I the LORD will hear them, I the God of Israel will not forsake them. I will open rivers in high places, and fountains in the midst of the valleys: I will make the wilderness a pool of water, and the **dry land springs of water.***"

Isaiah 32:18-19 - " *And **my people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation**, and in sure dwellings, and in quiet resting places; When it shall hail, coming down on the forest; and the city shall be low in a low place.*"

Psalms 91- " *He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.*

<sup>2</sup> *I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust.*

<sup>3</sup> *Surely **he shall deliver thee** from the snare of the fowler, and **from the noisome pestilence.***

<sup>4</sup> *He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler.*

<sup>5</sup> *Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day;*

<sup>6</sup> *Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday.*

<sup>7</sup> *A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but **it shall not come nigh thee.***

<sup>8</sup> *Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked.*

<sup>9</sup> *Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation;*

<sup>10</sup> *There shall no evil befall thee, **neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling.***

*<sup>11</sup> For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways.*

*<sup>12</sup> They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.*

*<sup>13</sup> Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet.*

*<sup>14</sup> Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name.*

*<sup>15</sup> He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: **I will be with him in trouble**; I will deliver him, and honour him.*

*<sup>16</sup> With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation."*

**Psalm 46 - " God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble.**

*<sup>2</sup> Therefore will not we fear, though the earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea;*

*<sup>3</sup> Though the waters thereof roar and be troubled, though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof.*

*<sup>4</sup> There is a river, the streams whereof shall make glad the city of God, the holy place of the tabernacles of the most High.*

*<sup>5</sup> God is in the midst of her; she shall not be moved: God shall help her, and that right early.*

*<sup>6</sup> The heathen raged, the kingdoms were moved: he uttered his voice, the earth melted.*

*<sup>7</sup> The LORD of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our refuge. Selah.*

*<sup>8</sup> Come, behold the works of the LORD, what desolations he hath made in the earth.*

*<sup>9</sup> He maketh wars to cease unto the end of the earth; he breaketh the bow, and cutteth the spear in sunder; he burneth the chariot in the fire.*

*<sup>10</sup> Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted among the heathen, I will be exalted in the earth.*

*<sup>11</sup> The LORD of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our refuge."*

***HOW GOD SUPPLIES  
SOME FAITHFUL PEOPLE  
WITH MANNA IN OUR DAY***

The book of Exodus records how, when the Hebrews were hungry in the desert, the Lord rained down manna for them. When the dew evaporated, there lay on the surface of the desert something small and flaky, as fine as frost, on the ground. *"It was like coriander seed, **white**; and the taste of it was **like wafers made with honey**."* (Exodus 16:14,31)

During April, 1939, a severe drought was devastating Angola, in Africa. In one location, a Seventh-day Adventist mission outpost, food supplies were totally exhausted. Not even the locusts had come!

The director of the station was absent at the time. His wife called the people on the station together for a meeting. "We have run out of food," she announced. "We should pray that God will provide for us our daily bread." So in faith they earnestly made their request for food.

After the prayer service, the director's little girl went out of the house, and in a short while she came back with her hands full of a kind of white stuff, which she was eating.

"What are you eating?" asked her mother.

"I went out," she answered, "and saw three people, and they said to me, 'Little girl, God has answered your prayer. He has sent

you food. It is manna. Take it and eat it.' That is what I am eating."

Then her mother and others went out, and they all found the same white stuff on the ground that the little girl had in her hands. Joyfully they gathered it, discovered it to be sweet as honey, and their hunger was satisfied.

Greatly impressed with this miraculous food supply that had come to them, the director's wife sent posthaste for her husband, bidding him:

"Hurry home. A miracle has happened."

So he returned to the mission and saw the food that the Lord had sent. It fell for three days, and only on 40 acres of cleared land, which was mission property. No one ever saw it come down, but in the morning when the dew had been dried by the sun, there it was! Unlike the manna in the Bible story, it did not spoil at the end of each day, so pots and bowls were filled, and the mission group had all they needed to eat until the next harvest time.

The mission director, fearing that his colleagues down in South Africa might question his story of this marvellous deliverance, sent a bowl of the manna along with his report by way of verification.

Edward Cardy travelled from Africa to Washington, U.S.A., and showed a little black box which held a sample of the "food from heaven". Many people examined it. It fitted the Bible description of manna in every detail.

## **Fall of manna continues**

This miracle of God's care continues, according to testimonies recorded more recently on video:

Manna has been falling in this drought-stricken area since 1945.

**Witness 1:** The taste? I can't describe it. It tastes of everything I have ever eaten that is good.

**Witness 2:** I can't really describe what it tastes like. It is *like honey*, it's *like a cake*. I really don't have words to describe what it tastes like. I just know that it's *white* and it's sweet. But the real taste, I do not have anything to compare with.

**Witness 3:** I had just been reading it in the *Story Time in Africa* book. I taught my kids when they were growing, that story. And when my kids heard that we were going to Angola, they asked me, "Mummy, that's the same place where manna was falling?"

I said, "Yes, but I don't know exactly where that place is." But when we came here to Angola, we enquired, and they said, "Yes. Actually, even now, manna is still falling."

And now I am happy that I have visited the place today. And I picked up a few pieces of it. I tested it... very nice. When you're eating it, it is *like something mixed with sweet*, and there's a good fragrance on it. You cannot really explain the way it is, but it is nice food.

**Witness 4:** When I heard about it, there was doubt from my colleagues. But now I've come here, and we've got a bit of it here. It's a bit hard. I think it has dried up a bit. It's *almost like icing sugar* that has been dried.

**Witness 5:** The *mission station was destroyed* during the civil war in Angola. It was more than 20 years till the mission station was rebuilt. *Manna stopped falling* - and only *started falling again when the mission station was rebuilt*.

This is a living miracle which shows the presence of God. On the day the mission station was dedicated to the Lord, manna fell like it had never happened before, and the community was terrified.

I was born at this place. I grew up in the same place. And from my childhood I've been witnessing this miracle of manna falling. But something which really troubled me, and it was a very big miracle and it happened in 2010. That year, after the mission had been renewed, manna fell in such quantities as we had never seen before. From the church to the mountain all the ground was covered with manna. And people were afraid to come out of their homes to collect it. Only little children came and collected it.

When the information reached the church union office, several pastors came to witness the miracle, because the manna continued to fall.

**Witness 6:** Some time in the past there was a famine in the area and people had no food. They decided to fast and pray to God. Pastor Sakisaki was director of the mission station. He was away and only women were around, but no food.

After three days of prayer, a small girl came to this bush, and found some things that *looked like bread*, but **white**. And she met some men who said, "Take, and eat."

She ate, and carried some back home. And when the parents saw her, they said, "**What is this** you have in your hand?"

She said, "I don't know. But I have eaten."

They said, "Don't eat. throw it."

She said, "I've already eaten. The men that I met told me to eat."

And they went to look for the men, but they were not there. Those men disappeared.

The people went and picked the manna and ate.

And it was *falling every day, except on Sabbath* [Saturday]. *These days it falls Wednesdays and Fridays*, if it's not raining.

When we came today, it had rained during the night. But manna fell. we still managed to find a bit of it, evidence that it was there.

**Witness 7:** There are no words to describe how I feel now. I remember that a pastor preached about *the Israelites* in the desert. When manna fell the first timer, they *asked*, "**What is**

*it?"* And that's the same question I have now, "What is it?" because I can't even describe it. It's a miracle.

There is a miracle within a miracle regarding the falling of manna at **da Namba Adventist mission station**.

When the church members are ***NOT in good standing order with the Lord***, the manna that falls is ***not white, but is blood-like and very bitter***.

The falling of manna has to do with the believers. If, in this congregation, one of the believers is not walking well with God, the manna that will fall that week will be bitter, until there's a revival among the members.

When ..... was administrator of this place, at a time when he was ***living in sin***, manna fell, but this ***manna was no longer white***, as it is today. It was ***white and red***. It was red and white. And people tried to taste it, but it was tasting bitter - because the administrator of the place was living in sin.

So, from that point, we got to know that this manna is sent by God to this place.

It is ***white and sweet***, as it is today, ***only when God's children*** in this place stand in His way, ***live according to His principles***. ***When someone*** among the people ***lives in his own way***, not according to what the Lord approves, the manna will fall, but it won't be edible. It will be bitter manna, and it will even change the color. It will be ***red manna***. White manna only falls when God's children walk in His way, and walk according to what He approves.

Testimonies here are really moving - that the Lord is witness to our character. He takes a record, and is concerned about our lifestyle, and how we live in secret and in public. He sees whatever is hidden.

It's like the times of old. When Israel sinned against God, calamities came upon the land. In the same manner, here, when, in this congregation, one person, even if a leader, goes astray, and harbors some sin, many people will suffer.

As we live in the last days, the miracle taking place in South

Angola is a living testimony that the Lord is there, and still cares for His people.

# INDEX

## **Advent awakening**

- expectation, disappointment, re-study 204-211

**America** in Bible prophecy 286-311,396-407

**Armageddon** 434-438

**Beast of Revelation** 235-268

**Bible**, how to read and understand 33-35

**CIA** 275-276

## **Covenant**

- in Daniel 9 108-115-116,129-130

- not "make" but "confirm" 129-130

- in Daniel 11 151-152

**Delays to prophecy fulfilment?** 158-159

**First Woe**, see Woes

**Four winds**, see Winds

**Futurism** 120-132

**Hijrah** 12,382-383

**Image of the beast** 301-305

## **Islam**

- statistics 9-18

- Arabs' origin and history 19-26

- children of the east 25,37-39

- locusts 40-42

- war horses 43-44

- four winds 45

- scorpions 46

- created by papacy 160,163-182

- is king of the north 160-161

- in First Woe 183-195

- in Second Woe 196-211

- in Third Woe 347-353

- wants Jerusalem 359-368

- wants to destroy Christianity 380-381

- will attack America 396-399

- protects God's people 200-203,408-417

- destroyed 434-438,440

### **Israel, modern state of**

- who set it up 354-358
- will be destroyed 369-378

### **Jerusalem**

- Vatican wanted it in past 165-166,173,176
- Vatican still wants it 182,399
- Islam wants it 359-368
- King of north to set up government there 160-161
- end-times temple theory 121,124,129
- seven year period theory 124-130
- make a peace covenant theory 129-130

### **Jesus** (see also, Love of God)

- Rescue plan 70-71
- Life on earth 72-74
- Death for us 74-78
- Resurrection 78-79
- Sanctuary ministry in heaven 212-215
- Second Coming 133-144,439-440
- Coming Kingdom 441-442

### **Jihad**, meaning of 353

### **Josiah Litch** 7-8,204-205

### **Judgment**

- standard is God's law 209-210
- three phases of 223-234

### **King of the north** 147-149,156,160-161

### **King of the south** 147-149,157

### **Latter rain** 387-392

### **Law of God**

- attacked by Rome 98,256-258
- standard of God's judgment 209-210

### **Litch, Josiah** 7-8,204-205

### **Love of God** 47-48,54-81,235-236,263-266,451

### **Loud Cry** 393-395,400

### **Lucifer**

- his rebellion 49-81
- his attack against rescue plan 82-86
- will impersonate Jesus 420-421

**Manna** 455-459

**Mark of the beast** 235, 260-262,306,310-311,,  
327,331-341,403-406

- not a computer chip 335
- contrast with seal of God 334-341

**Message, God's last, to the world** 324-340

**Miracle of manna** 455-459

**Muslims**, see Islam

**New earth** 441-442

**Pattern of prophecies** 145,158

**Peace treaty**, see Covenant

**Plagues**, see Seven last plagues

**Prepare, how to** 81,442-448

**Probation, close of** 418

**Protection**

- by God promised 402-403,449-459
- by Islam 200-203,408-417

**Prophecies**

- Can they be delayed? 159-160
- of Jews 27
- of Arabs 27-32
- Daniel 2 89-91
- Daniel 7 92-101
- Daniel 8 102-110,116-117
- Daniel 9 111-118,124-133
- Daniel 8 and 9 connected 227-229
- Daniel 10-12 147-162
- Pattern of Daniel 146
- Revelation 9 184-211
- Revelation 10 206-207
- Revelation 13 240-263,286-311
- Revelation 17 250-251

**Rapture theory** 119-145

**Rescue plan** 47-82

**Rome, pagan** 83-85,103-104,150-153

**Rome, papal**

- rise of 85-86
- continuation of Roman empire 86,242-243
- allegiance to Lucifer 270-271

- in Daniel 7 96-100
- in Daniel 8 103-117
- in Daniel 11
  - \* direct 153-155
  - \* through other powers 155-161,269,272
- in Revelation 13 235-263
- in Revelation 17 250-251,262
- created Islam 160,162-181
- controls all organizations 269-285,306-307
- strongest of all powers 306-307
- controls Israel 354-358
- planning America's downfall 312-323,435
- wants Jerusalem 181,399
- destruction of 439-440

**Sabbath** 313-330

**Salvation, plan of** 47-81

- how to accept 81,444-448

**Sanctuary** 212-234

**Satan**, see Lucifer

**Seal of God** 334-341

**Second Woe**, see Woes

**Seven last plagues** 423-433

**Statistics, Muslim** 9-18

**Suffering, why** 47-48,54-81

**Sunday law**, see Mark of the beast

**Third Woe**, see Woes

**Three angels' messages** 324-341

- connected with Three Woes 342-346
- evidence of God's love 332

**Three Woes**, see Woes

**Time lag in prophetic fulfilment** 157-158

**Tribulation** 133-141,425

**Vatican**, see Rome, papal

**Winds, four** 45,350,353,385-386,416-418

**Woes**

- first 183-195
- second 196-211
- third 347-353
- connected with three angels' messages 342-346

